MAIN ASPECTS OF THE SOCIAL AND POLITICAL CONTENT OF BAṢRĪ POETRY UNTIL THE END OF THE UMAYYAD ERA

by

'AWN AL-SHĀRĪF QĀSIM

Thesis presented for the Degree of Doctor of Philosophy of the University of Edinburgh

1967.
In preparing this study I have availed myself of the labours of many scholars who have contributed to this field, to all of whom I owe a debt of profound appreciation. Especially do I wish to mention in this connection the works of Charles Pellat which rendered my work easier. The sympathy and help of my supervisors Professor W. Montgomery Watt and Dr. P. Cachia were essential for the completion of this study. Their encouragement and the meticulous care they have taken in reading and commenting upon the first draft of this thesis will ever be remembered with gratitude and respect. I also wish to thank the staff of the University Library of Edinburgh and the National Library of Scotland who offered me every kind of facility. I am also greatly indebted to Dr. Mahmūd A. al-Ghūl of St. Andrews University who was kind enough to lend me an important reference work unobtainable elsewhere.

April, 1967. A.A. Qāsim.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Abbreviation</th>
<th>Full Form</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Agh.</td>
<td>Aghānī</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>'Ajj.</td>
<td>Dīwān of 'Ajjāj</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Aswad</td>
<td>Dīwān of Abū-ʾl-Aswad</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bal.</td>
<td>Baladhrī</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ch.</td>
<td>Chapter</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>E.I.</td>
<td>Encyclopaedia of Islam</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Far.</td>
<td>Dīwān of al-Farazdaq</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ibn-An.</td>
<td>Ibn-al-Anbārī</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ibn-Ath.</td>
<td>Ibn-al-Athīr</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ibn-Khall.</td>
<td>Ibn-Khallikan</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ibn-Qut.</td>
<td>Ibn-Qutayba</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ibn-Sall.</td>
<td>Ibn-Sallām</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jar.</td>
<td>Dīwān of Jarīr</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Khaw.</td>
<td>Shiʿr al-Khawārij, ed. Iḥsan ʿAbbas</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Khiz.</td>
<td>Khizānat al-Adab</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mar.</td>
<td>Marzubānī</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mub.</td>
<td>Mubarrad</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Muʿj.</td>
<td>Muʿjam ash-Shuʿaraʾ</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mуwash.</td>
<td>Mуwashshah</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Naq.</td>
<td>Naqāʾīq</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Q.</td>
<td>Qurʾān</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ruʿb.</td>
<td>Dīwān of Ruʿba</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rumma</td>
<td>Dīwān of Dhūʾr-Rumma</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sh.</td>
<td>ash-Shiʿr waʾsh-Shuʿaraʾ</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ṭab.</td>
<td>Ṭabarī</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Waf.</td>
<td>Wafayāt al-Aʿyān</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Yāq.</td>
<td>Yaḥūt</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
TABLE OF CONTENTS

Acknowledgements ........................... ii
Abbreviations ............................... iii

CHAPTER I

Introduction

The Political, Social and Cultural Life of Basra until the end of the Umayyad Period

i. Political life:
1. Early development ...................... 1
2. The Arab tribes in Basra ............... 6
3. Death of 'Uthman and its aftermath ... 9
4. The pattern of tribal alliances ........ 11
5. The Umayyad era ......................... 17

ii. Social development:
1. Tribalism in urban setting ............. 26
2. The growth of an oligarchy ............. 31
3. The influence of the bādiya and Khurasan ..... 35
4. The qurra' ............................... 38
5. The mawali ............................... 39
6. Trade .................................. 49
7. Urban consciousness .................... 51

iii. Cultural life:
1. Religious trends ......................... 56
2. Philological and linguistic studies ... 62
3. Literary studies ......................... 66

CHAPTER II

The Place of Poetry in Baṣrī Society

1. The uniqueness of Baṣrī poetry ........ 70
2. Nizārī preponderance .................... 72
3. Umayyads and poetry .................... 75
4. Poetry and tribes ......................... 78
5. The poet between tribe and state 81
6. Popular appeal 94
7. Currency and transmission of poetry 98
8. Relations between poets 106

CHAPTER III

Poetry and tribal relations:

1. A บาศริ genre 114
2. Petty disputes provoke poetic feuds 116
3. The รอิสร becomes the forum of poetic feuds 123
4. The age of Jarīr and al-Farazdaq 132
5. Rivalry within the same tribe 133
6. The tribe against other tribes and larger groups 143

CHAPTER IV

Poetry and the state:

i. Poets and the caliphate 149
ii. Poets and administrators 168
iii. Poets as public conscience 202

CHAPTER V

Poetry and Social Change:

i. Islam versus Jahili customs 216
   1. Jahili features 217
   2. Impact of Islam 219
ii. Other Social aspects 259
iii. The mawalī 287

CHAPTER VI

Poetry and Cultural Change.

CHAPTER VII

Social Change and the Structure of Poetry: 328
Appendix 347
Bibliography 387
CHAPTER I
INTRODUCTION

THE POLITICAL, SOCIAL AND CULTURAL LIFE OF BASRA
UNTIL THE END OF THE UMAYYAD ERA

i. POLITICAL LIFE

1. Early development:

The region of Baṣra and its vicinity played in Pre-Islamic Arabia a role comparable to that of the Ghassānid and Lakhmid principalities in their relations with the Byzantine and Sassanid empires. The marauding Arabs in the neighbourhood, especially the Banū-Bakr ibn-Wā'īl, had already inflicted a defeat on the Sassanid forces in the battle of Dhū-Qār (611 A.D.) and started to raid the western reaches of their empire.¹ The Persians, in an attempt to ward off their harassment, placated the major tribe of Bakr, and appointed their chief, Qays ibn-Mas‘ūd of Shaybān, a governor over the region of Ubulla.² Furthermore, its environs were given (aqṭa‘a) to him and his people.³ When the Muslims arrived in 12/633 the region was, however, in ruin with a few garrisons 'to prevent the incursions of the nomads in the area'.⁴

The region was familiar to the Arabs in another important respect. The commercial activities of the port

---

². Mar., Mu'j., 200-201; cf. E.I.¹, "Bakr" by Schleifer.
⁴. Dīnawarī, Akhbār, 123.
of Ubulla had drawn the caravans of Arab traders to the region which was known to them in Pre-Islamic times as 'the land of India' (arḍ al-Hind). It is very likely that the famous fair of Başra, al-Mirbad, dated back to this Pre-Islamic era. The fact that it was three miles to the west of Başra, on the edge of the desert,² may indicate that it had an independent growth, prior to the establishment of the town itself. The Persian authorities, in their drive to keep the neighbouring Arab tribes at bay, might have determined this site of the fair which came to be known as 'the gate of the desert'.³

Those Arabs in the vicinity especially Banū-Bakr were quick to sense, from their long raiding experience against the Persians, the weakness of their defences, and so resumed their raids under the leadership of Suwayd ibn-Quṭba⁴, sometime before the arrival of the official expedition under 'Utba ibn-Ghazwan.⁵ Although 'Utba arrived in the year 11+/635, the town was not formally established as a 'miṣr' - border town⁶ - before the year 17 A.H.⁷ The site along the desert border was chosen after three alternatives along the coast

1. Ṭab., i, 2378; Hamdānī, Ṣifat, 204; Yaq., Buldān, i, 641; cf. E.I.¹, S.V. "Obolla" by Kramers.
2. Yaq., op.cit., iv, 484.
3. cf. Ṭab., op.cit., i, 2379; Pellat, Milieu Basrien, 35; Muqaddasī, Aḥsan at-Tagāṣīm, 117.
5. Yaq., op.cit., i, 630; Dinawari, op.cit., 122.
7. Ṭab., op.cit., i, 2486.
had proved damaging to the health of Arab troops.\(^1\) The experience of three years of fighting during which the camp had been repeatedly shifted, indicated to the Arabs the danger of entrenching themselves in the midst of a hostile population. A site bordering on the desert ensured an uninterrupted link with the Arabian heartland in any emergency.\(^2\) Military considerations were pre-eminent in the whole enterprise. The overriding objective was to contain the Sassanid forces in the area and prevent them from re-inforcing their brothers to the north where the major Muslim onslaught had been underway.\(^3\) The speedy successes of the Arabs in the north encouraged the small expedition of 'Utba accompanied by some members of the tribes of Bakr and Tamīm\(^4\) to storm the main Persian garrisons in Ubulla and put their defenders to flight. The resounding victory and the news of rich booty attracted hordes of Bedouins from far and near.\(^5\) The tribe of Tamīm was frequently cited by chroniclers as a major source of such emigrants.\(^6\)

The early expeditions used mobile camps, and it was only when the number of expeditionary forces and tribes increased appreciably that the establishment of a permanent

\(^1\) Ibid., i, 2380; Ibn-Ath., ḑāmil, ii, 411.
\(^2\) cf. Bal., op.cit., 483-4; Yāq., op.cit., i, 640.
\(^3\) Yāq., op.cit., i, 638; Tab., op.cit., i, 2377-8.
\(^4\) Yāq., op.cit., 638.
\(^6\) Ibn-al-Faqīh, Buldān, 188.
garrison town was considered necessary.\textsuperscript{1} The makeshift nature of the initial stage is demonstrated by the ephemeral construction of the Camp where tents and pavilions were used first,\textsuperscript{2} followed by structures of stalks and reeds.\textsuperscript{3} Later unbaked bricks were used to give the garrison a more permanent base.\textsuperscript{4} The prospects of ever increasing sources of riches were a powerful stimulus to a steady flow of emigrants from all parts of Arabia, especially from the neighbouring regions of Bahrein (Baḥrayn) and Yamāma. The warriors came at first without their women folk,\textsuperscript{5} giving the impression that the enterprise had been deemed temporary and short-lived. The turn of events, however, rendered the creation of a permanent post to control the military activities in the region imperative. Seven quarters (dasākir) were constructed and men were distributed among them\textsuperscript{6} on a tribal basis.\textsuperscript{7} It is important to note here that from the start the tribes were left under no misapprehension as to where the real authority resided. The caliph 'Umar I seized the earliest opportunity to replace Mujāshi‘ ibn-Mas‘ūd of Sulaym, the man put in charge by 'Utba before he finally left for Medina in 17 A.H., by al-Mughīra ibn-Shu‘ba of Thaqīf, making it clear that the urban dwellers (ahl al-madar) were more entitled to be

\textsuperscript{1} Yaq., op.cit., i, 640; Bal., op.cit., 483-4.
\textsuperscript{2} Bal., 476.
\textsuperscript{3} Ibid., 483-4; Ṭab., op.cit., i, 2487.
\textsuperscript{4} Jáḥiz, Bayān, ii, 226.
\textsuperscript{5} Among 'Utba's 600 men there were only 6 women, Yaq., op.cit., 639.
\textsuperscript{6} Ibid., 639, 641.
\textsuperscript{7} Dinawarī, op.cit., 125.
appointed governors than Bedouins (ahl al-wabar). It was, however, to the governorship of Abū-Mūsā al-Ash’arī—(17-29/638-650 with an interruption of one year (21-22/642-643) – that the town owed its early development. The grouping together of diverse tribes within the bounds of one town was a new experience to most of them and frictions and strains were inevitable. Tensions had already been mounting when Abū-Mūsā was commissioned by ‘Umar I who indicated to him that he was sending him to a people 'among whom the devil had pitched his camp', Abū-Mūsā built the mosque and government headquarters with bricks and mud, and it was during this time that date-palms were cultivated, and individuals were granted permission to cultivate wastelands. The drive towards acquiring and exploiting lands was so strong that the caliph had to warn the people of Basra not to undermine the fertility of the land by exhausting the soil. This urban development stands in sharp contrast with the military function of a garrison town which Basra was initially meant to be. From its inception an increasingly important section of its population began to lay the foundations of a settled community which the frequent movement of troops did not disturb. Although the town preserved its military function and character for over a century, it is essential to note that it was the resident,

2. Ibn-Sa‘d, Tabagat, iv, Part I, 81.
and hence the permanent, urban community of Başra that left its mark on the records of early Islam.

The early development of the town was not always a smooth process. It soon became evident that the influx of emigrants drawn by the exceptionally lucrative ventures of the early conquerors could not be matched by a comparable increase in revenues. The slackening in the wave of conquests at such a formative stage of the development of the town, could only force a portion of the ever-increasing population of the town to fall back on other means of securing a livelihood, thus accentuating the drive towards more urbanization. This early crisis explains the complaint of the governor of Başra in 22/643 to 'Umar I about the over-crowding of Başra and the shortage of ḥarāj which could only be put right by transferring to Başra some of the ḥarāj lands of Kūfah, a measure which 'Umar readily approved.¹ The eloquence of al-Āḥnaf ibn-Qays, the leader of Tamīm, was put to service in a passionate appeal to 'Umar to alleviate the hardships of the people by making certain concessions.²

2. The Arab tribes in Başra:

The civil and military aspects of the life of Başra became so intertwined that an attempt to separate them would be fraught with difficulties. For the continued prosperity of urban life depended in great measure on the revenue

1. Ṭab., op.cit., i, 2672-3.
2. Jahiz, op.cit., i, 251-2; Ṭab., i, 2538-9.
resulting from fresh conquests. The bulk of the Arab population continued to draw, as we shall see presently, regular stipends (‘atā’) from the public treasury, even though they did not participate in the actual campaigns. The justification for the ‘atā’ was the readiness with which the various tribes offered recruits when called upon by the authorities. This system ensured both a regular supply of fresh troops to extend the thrust of Muslim forces eastwards, and a steady flow of funds to maintain the gradually developing urban community. It is in this duality in the character of Baṣra, that a fairly reasonable explanation of its tumultuous history should be sought. The reluctance of the Bedouin tribes to submit to centralized control which the government was keen to impose, was heightened by the policy of this same government which continued to maintain the tribal structure for military and financial reasons. This subtle contradiction helped to endow Baṣra with a virile and unruly character.

The fact that the settlers in the town and its vicinity were largely from tribes of the eastern part of Arabia such as Tamīm, Bakr and ‘Abd-al-Qays, who had revolted against the central authority after the death of Muḥammad, goes a long way to account for the persistence of many of them in defying most efforts to blunt the edges of tribal rivalry within the miṣr. But it must be realized here that although tribal friction had always been a potential menace, even during the
early days of 'Umar I, the impact of Islam on tribal relations was enormous. The aftermath of the "ridda" wars, when the central government in Medina reasserted its position by imposing its authority on the recalcitrant tribes, was a semblance of unity forged between the Arab tribes which lasted until the murder of the third caliph, 'Uthmān, in 35/656. The zeal with which the concerted efforts of the Arab tribes were directed towards conquests along the Persian frontiers helped these tribes to sink their differences for some time. Although their vast majority were not fully aware of the details of their new religion, the fact that they were fighting in the name of Islam and receiving their commands from a central authority in Medina was in itself a revolutionary concept which, given sufficient time, was destined to change their existence immeasurably. Though the army was organized on tribal lines, members of one tribe usually fighting under one of their chiefs, the overall command was the prerogative of the caliph or his lieutenants. The various tribes fought not to further mainly their own ends, as they did previously, but to further a more general cause: that of the Islamic community which was symbolized by the caliphate. They surrendered their authority to that of the central state under which they served as a unit. With this conception looming at the back of their minds, a resurgence of tribalism on the "pre-Islamic (Jāhili) model

1. Jahiz, Bayān, ii, 233 where he refers specifically to friction between tribes in a letter to Abū-Mūsā and exhorts him to deal severely with the culprits.
became a remote possibility. Islam attempted to remove some of the causes that previously invited rivalry and war. Their allegiance was gradually shifted from the tribe to the state. The booty and war pensions were divided among them equitably according to a rigid system. But tribalism did not disintegrate. The new conditions only transformed it. A kind of tribalism in an Islamic setting, taking cognizance of the caliphate as the binding force and then as a bone of contention, was definitely given a fresh lease of life. The scope of its activities was, however, restricted on the whole by certain political, social and sometimes religious considerations derived generally from the natural growth of the Islamic empire.

3. The death of ‘Uthman and its aftermath:

With such vague notions of Islamic unity the Arab tribes moved eastwards and settled in Baṣra. The policy of ‘Umar I was as indicated earlier sternly against appealing to tribalism. The combined efforts of members of different tribes in the unified armies dispatched from Baṣra, and the reciprocal relations between the various groups inside the town itself, all tended to promote a spirit of solidarity among them. The death of ‘Umar I in 23/644, however, brought to a head a development which had been seething for some time. The drive towards extending the peripheries of the empire had already started to take its toll on Arabia in general and on

1. cf. P.8 note 1 above.
Medina in particular. The *amsār* attracted the cream of the Arab race, causing to a large extent the depletion of the heart of Arabia. In becoming the centres of military power they inevitably became the wielders of actual power in the empire, thus robbing Medina of a sizeable part of its influence as the seat of the central government. The position of Medina was further weakened by its increasing dependence on the revenues from the provinces, especially Iraq. All this helped to augment the prestige of the *amsār* and tilt the balance of power in their favour, a position which they would naturally be tempted to exploit when circumstances served. The iron hand of 'Umar I and his rigid discipline together with the relatively less complicated problems attending the early growth of the empire helped to keep the lid firmly in position. The caliphate of 'Uthmān (23-35/644-656) gave vent to a variety of tendencies which had been brewing for some time. The machinery of government was becoming more complicated and the frontiers of the empire were extending far beyond the administrative capacity of the government in Medina. The problems and difficulties encountered by the Arabs in their new settlements in the provinces were beginning to take definite shape and hence had to be countered with definite solutions. More important, the Muslim armies were experiencing increasing resistance in their drive eastwards, and successes in battle were achieved at higher costs. The stresses and strains of social and political change were
heightened by some measures of 'Uthmān's. Under him, the ideal of Islamic commonwealth, which was the bulwark of the empire and the only guarantee of its unity, was dangerously challenged by the steadily increasing power of Quraysh as a whole and Banū-Umayya in particular. Thus the delicate balance between the tribes was seriously disturbed as a result of the exploitation of communal effort by the members of this tribe.¹ In 29/650 'Uthmān replaced Abu-Mūsā al-Aṣh'ārī by his young cousin, 'Abdallāh ibn-'Āmir. Under him the people of Baṣra took part in the conquests of İṣṭakhr, Fārs, Khurāsān and Sijistān and the Islamic dominions were pushed as far as the Oxus.

4. The pattern of tribal alliances:

The tribal situation in Baṣra after the murder of 'Uthmān was far from clear. The alignments appeared to be dictated by the pressure of events rather than by a definite line of political thinking. Although Baṣra came to be known as the staunchest supporter of 'Uthmān and the seat of his partisans, the 'Uthmāniyya,² the stand of the various tribes was not

---

¹. The grumbling of the Arabs against Quraysh was expressed by 'Amr ibn-Ma'dī-Karib the Yemenite warrior and poet, even during the caliphate of 'Umar I, when he addressed him in verse: 'When we are killed and nobody mourns us, Quraysh says: Oh! That is fate! We are given equality in receiving piercing thrusts (of lances), and denied it when receiving dīnārs.' ـ Al-'lqd-al-Farīḍ, i, 297-8.

². 'lqd, vii, 280. This term, earlier used to denote those who espoused the cause of the murdered caliph, later assumed philosophical and theological dimensions reflected in Jāḥiz's book on the sect.
uniform. Already the tribal structure within the town was beginning to take its final shape. The Confederations between tribes and clans according to common descent, pre-Islamic or Islamic affiliation dictated the division of the town into five tribal sectors (akhmās, singular khums). Although the term was mentioned for the first time just before the battle of Ṣiffin (37/658),¹ the actual division dated in all probability from further back. The khums of Tamīm and the khums of Ahl al-ʿĀliya represented the Muṣarite tribes. The two khums’s of Bakr and ʿAbd-al-Qays represented the Rabīʿite tribes, while the khums of Azd represented the Yemenite tribes.²

The year 36/656 was a dividing line not only in the history of Başra but also in that of Islam. The majority of Muṣar with the exception of the clan of Banū-Saʿd of Tamīm, and the Yemenite Azd supported ʿĀʾisha, and were called ʿUthmānis for this reason, while the majority of Rabīʿa (Bakr and ʿAbd-al-Qays) rallied to the support of ʿAlī. Although the religious consideration was prominent, the actual division was largely dictated by sectional and tribal interests. We shall see from now onwards the survival and sometimes the rejuvenation of certain pre-Islamic practices within the structure of the major political forces involved. Thus at a time when religious qualms impelled only a few

¹. Naṣr ibn-Muzāḥim, Ṣiffin, 131; cf., however, Ṭab., i, 3455.
². cf. Pellat, op.cit., 22-34, for a full treatment of the akhmās.
individuals to be neutral,\(^1\) tribal solidarity drove the influential clan of Tamīm, the Banū-Sa'd under the leadership of al-Āhnaf ibn-Qays, to stand aloof from both camps although they were 'Uthmāniyya\(^2\) because the partisans of 'Uthmān demanded the life of Ḥurqūṣ ibn-Zuhayr of Sa'd who played a leading role in the regicide. The Banū-Sa'd protected their member and broke away from their main tribal alliance. The Rabī'a (Bakr and 'Abd-al-Qays) felt the supremacy of the combined forces of Mūḍar and Azd when over 600 of those who marched against 'Uthmān from Baṣra were ruthlessly butchered.\(^3\) Ṭalḥa and az-Zubayr showed their preference to Mūḍar by giving them the highest pensions to the exclusion of Rabī'a, who attacked the treasury as a counter measure, but were repulsed with great losses.\(^4\) Thus Bakr and 'Abd-al-Qays, after the battle of az-Zābūqa shortly before the arrival of 'Alī, were virtually driven from Baṣra and had to await the arrival of 'Alī outside the town.\(^5\) This battle which took place inside Baṣra precipitated the pattern of tribal alliances in the Battle of the Camel and hardened the division of Baṣra into two warring factions: Rabī'a versus Mūḍar assisted by Azd. This polarization, however, was not so complete as to overshadow some other important forces, which, as we shall consider later, were at work at the same time and

\(^1\) cf. Ibn-Sa'd, vii, Part 1, 82; iv, Part 2, 27; Ibn-Ath., iii, 171.
\(^2\) Ibn-Ath., iii, 171.
\(^3\) Ibn-Ath., iii, 178.
\(^4\) Ibid.
\(^5\) Ibid.
resulted in splitting a good number of the major tribes and thereby disrupting their solid communal affinity.\(^1\) The Battle of the Camel (36/657) was on the whole a dress-rehearsal of the complicated pattern into which tribal affiliations fell during the Umayyad period. While the tribes took sides to decide such a public question as the caliphate, they had a wider latitude for manoeuvres to entrench their respective interests. The major consideration in supporting the rival claimants to the caliphate was the natural advantages accruing from backing a winning horse. The shifting pattern of tribal allegiance represented the conflicting interests of the various groups within the town.

The defeat of ‘A’isha and her Baṣrī supporters in the Battle of the camel left Baṣra in the hands of ‘Alī who appointed ‘Abdallāh ibn-‘Abbās as its governor. The immediate result of the defeat was the flight of some ‘Uthmānīs to al-Jazīrah, in the jurisdiction of Mu‘āwiya,\(^2\) and the rallying of a good number of Baṣrīs to ‘Alī especially the Banū-Sa‘d who had formerly been neutral.\(^3\) In the Battle of Šīfīn (37/658) representatives of the five tribal groups were present in the ranks of ‘Alī under their leaders.\(^4\) The qurra‘ of Baṣra, of whom we shall hear later on, emerged in this battle as a distinguished group under the leadership of Mis‘ar ibn-Fadakī.\(^5\)

---

1. cf. Ṭab., op.cit., i, 3168-9, 3178, 3179; See pp. 28-31 below.
2. Šīfīn, 16, 39.
3. Ṭab., i, 341f.
5. Šīfīn, 235; Ṭab., i, 3283.
The Battle of Ṣiffin and the fiasco of the arbitration followed by the massacre of Nahrawān, where the Khārijites, the majority of whom were from Baṣra, were killed, reinforced the conviction of many an Arab that the struggle for the caliphate was waged only for the benefit of one section of Quraysh or the other. The lukewarm attitude of Baṣra as a whole is indicated by the reluctance of both the ‘Uthmānīs and the supporters of ‘Alī to join forces with their respective sides. The repeated appeals of ‘Alī for reinforcement brought him only just over 3,000 out of a population of 60,000 able-bodied men according to Ibn-‘Abbās, ‘Alī’s governor in Baṣra. In 38/659, Muʿāwiyah, in a bid to win the sympathy of Baṣra to his cause sent ‘Abdallāh ibn-al-Ḥaḍramī to the town to instigate the people against ‘Alī. Though the episode ended in burning the emissary alive, its real significance lay in kindling more than ever before the tribal strife and deepening the rift between the factions. The ‘Uthmāniyya (Mudar and Azd) were divided in their attitudes to Ibn-al-Ḥaḍramī; the Banū-Qays, a branch of Ṭuḥair, let him down because of the inclination of their leader, ad-Daḥhak ibn-Qays, to ‘Alī, while Tamīm, the other branch, supported him because he had taken refuge with them. The Rabī‘a who had previously supported the ‘Alid cause

1. Ṭab., i, 3382; cf. E.I., S.V. "Khawārij"; cf. Watt, Integration, 94-104.
2. Ṭab., i, 3370-1.
3. Ibid., i, 3414.
4. Ibid., i, 3415-7.
refused to help Ziyād, the deputy of Ibn-‘Abbās and the representative of ‘Alī, because the leader of Bakr, Mūlik ibn-Misma’ was inclined towards Banū-Umayya,\(^1\) while the Azd who were anti-‘Alid, defended Ziyād mainly because he had sought their protection.\(^2\) The Banū-Sa‘d, who had been neutral before, gave their support to the Azd because their leader Jāriya ibn-Qudama thought their interest could be best served by that arrangement.\(^3\)

Thus the consequence of the civil war in Islam was an entrenchment of the activities of tribes as far as the struggle for the caliphate was concerned. They began to view the whole situation from the angle of tribal interest. The lack of any definite line of policy to dominate the scene and give the town a semblance of unity as was the case in Kūfa or Syria or Ḥijāz, put the town squarely in the grip of conflicting loyalties which rendered the maintenance of the sensitive balance of power inside the town very difficult. The Basrīs’\(^4\) preoccupation with their internal problems and conflicts reduced drastically their active participation in the major conflicts. The internal development of the town was producing other problems, but at the same time creating conditions conducive to the growth of a parochial outlook despite the tribal superstructure.

---

5. The Umayyad era:

The reigns of Muʿawiyah and Yazīd (41-64/661-683) witnessed the restoration of peace and order in Başra after the brief term as emir of ʿAbdallāh ibn-ʿAmīr (41-64/661-664) had thrown the town into chaos and corruption.1 Under Ziyād (45-53/665-672) and his son ʿUbaydallāh (53-64/672-683) the miṣr was subjected to strict administrative measures designed to curb all sorts of lawlessness and rebellion against the government. Tribes had to be brought to heel by stemming their tendency to revive their old desert practices and assert their power over that of the government. The task was formidable and the attempt to achieve it costly.2 The degree of chaos and the complete breakdown of administration since the Battle of the Camel in 36/657 is indicated by the famous speech of Ziyād.3 He imposed a curfew on the town and put any transgressor to the sword. The severe measures paid dividends in time. The twenty years of uninterrupted rigid control helped to put Başra firmly in the path of urban development in all respects. The town grew rapidly in population, wealth and culture. Concerted military efforts were directed against the rebellious Khawārij.

The death of Yazīd I in 64/683 and the ensuing deadlock over the caliphate triggered off all the public indignation

1. Ţab., ii, 67.
2. Ibn-Ath., iii, 384: the deputy of Ziyād, Samura ibn-Jundab is reported to have executed 8,000 men in 6 months.
3. Ţab., ii, 73.
felt by Başrīs over the Umayyad policy of repression in the town. 'Ubaydallāh ibn-Ziyād fled and the town was once more left in the grip of tribes. The struggle for power inside the town was complicated by yet another important external factor. The garrison town was gradually dragged into the welter of tribal conflicts in the East. The eastern front where the cream of Başrī troops were dominant was beginning to rob Başra of a large measure of its initiative. Conflicts and clashes between the Başrī tribes in Khurasān, where they represented the majority, came steadily to leave their impact on Başra and poison the relations between the resident members of the various tribes. This tended, as we shall see presently, to diminish the overall effect of the other civilizing factors which were steadily working for the elimination of tensions between the dwellers of the town. Thus the increasing importance of conditions in the East and the profound influence they came to exert on the course of events in Başra tended to divert the attention of Başrīs once more from the public questions and embroil them in their endemic conflicts. This, as we have noticed earlier, diminished the importance of Başra as a force to be reckoned with in any major strife as far as the caliphate was concerned.

Hatred of Umayyad rule drove the majority of factions to agree on paying allegiance to 'Abdallāh ibn-az-Zubayr as caliph. They also settled for 'Abdallāh ibn-al-Ḥārith.

1. Ṭab., ii, 1290-1, at the time of Qutayba ibn-Muslīm, there were in Khurasān 40,000 from Başra, 7,000 from Kūfa and 7,000 clients.
2. Bal., Ansāb, v, 188.
the Ḥāshimite, for their governor.¹ At this juncture, however, events in Khurasan threw their dark shadow on the home front. The Muğarite ‘Abdallāh ibn-Khāzim of Sulaym, a clan of Qays, inflicted a heavy defeat on Rabīʿa in Harāt.² This revived the old hostilities between the two branches of ‘Adnān: Rabīʿa and Muğar. The immediate consequence of the encounter was that the Rabīʿa and Muğar in Başra took arms against each other in support of their respective brethren in Khurasan. But the power of Muğar, with the influential tribe of Tamīm as its leader, outweighed that of Rabīʿa. So Rabīʿa were hard pressed to contact the Azd for support and to offer the renewal of the ancient pact that had existed between them in pre-Islamic days.³ Thus the pact between Bakr, the major branch of Rabīʿa, and the Azd was rejuvenated and their combined forces fought Tamīm and its confederates for about nine months.⁴ The town became the scene of destruction, arson, pillage and lawlessness. The Azāriqa, a good number of whom were released from prison,⁵ seized the opportunity and dealt the town devastating blows. All the factions suffered heavily at their hands. The Khārijite menace overshadowed all other differences. In point of fact, it was the growing intensity of the Khārijite assaults,

1. Ṭab., ii, 444; Dinawarī, 292; Naj., 112.
5. Dinawarī, 292.
threatening as they did the very existence of Basra as such, that hastened the cessation of hostilities between the tribal belligerents. The outbreak of a severe epidemic at the time depressed the situation further. They appealed for help to Ibn-az-Zubayr who sent them al-Ḥārith ibn-‘Abdallāh, nicknamed al-Qubā‘, as governor. Peace was concluded and energies were directed against the Azāriqa under the command of al-Muhallab ibn-Abī-Ṣufra. The defeat of al-Mukhtār of Kūfah in 67/686 left Muṣ‘ab in complete control of Iraq. Meanwhile the fateful Battle of Marj Rāhiṭ between the Yemenite Kalb and the Muḥarīrīt Qays put ‘Abd-al-Malik ibn-Marvān and his Yemenite supporters in control of Syria. The confrontation between the Zubayrid and the Marwānid claimants to the caliphate was imminent. But the stand of Basra, as usual, was not uniform. Although the majority of Baṣrīs supported Muṣ‘ab against al-Mukhtār and paid allegiance to Ibn-az-Zubayr, a number of them double-crossed him when Khālid ibn-‘Abdallāh ibn-Asīd entered Basra behind the back of Muṣ‘ab to rally the people to the Umayyads. Some notables of Basra had already entered secretly into negotiation with ‘Abd-al-Malik. But as the Battle of Jufra outside Basra in 71/690 revealed, they did not maintain their promised support to the Syrian detachment outside their town which was defeated by the forces of Muṣ‘ab.

1. Tab., ii, 580; Ansāb, ivB, 123; Ibn-Ath., iv, 173.
2. Ansāb, v, 188, 220.
3. Dīnawārī, 312-314.
4. Tab., ii, 799; Ansāb, ivB, 155.
5. Ansāb, v, 280.
The Umayyad attempt failed because the petty internal conflicts overshadowed the major issue. The Tamīmites stood by their fellow tribesman, ‘Abbād ibn-al-Ḥusayn al-Ḥabaṭī who happened to be the security officer of Ibn-Ma'mar, the deputy of Muṣ'ab in Baṣra. The Rabī'ites and Azdites supported Mālik ibn-Misma', the leader of the Rabī'ite Bakr who had granted refuge to Khalid ibn-Asid, the Umayyad emissary. They fought for 40 days before agreeing to evict Khalid from Baṣra as a compromise. It is important to note here that the Qaysites did not side with their Muğarite Confederate, Tamīm, as they had done before in the troubles of 64 A.H. against the combined forces of Rabī'a and Azd. The rift in the Muğarite camp in Baṣra was caused by what had been taking place in Khurasan. The same forces which had brought about the polarization of the population of Baṣra into two major conflicting camps were at work again and resulted in splitting the Muğarite camp. The same ‘Abdallāh ibn-Khāzim of Qays who caused the first upheaval, attacked his former allies Tamīm who reacted by killing him. Thus the political scene in Baṣra increased in complexity by this development. From now onwards events inside the town would be influenced by the strife of four tribal blocks: Qaysite, Tamīmite, Rabī'ite and Yemenite. This is in marked contrast with the workings of the official Umayyad policy which was based on the major tribal blocks: the Southern Arabs

2. cf. ibid., 171-173, 210, 212, 282.
(Yemenites) represented by Kalb, versus the North Arabs (‘Adnanīs) represented by Qays.

The defeat of Muṣ‘ab and his death in 72/691 placed Baṣra once more under the control of the Umayyads who utilized the tribal conflicts to their advantage. The Umayyad policy of attempting to maintain power through encouraging tribal strife and playing off the conflicting camps found a fertile field in Baṣra judging by the brief term of the governorship of Bishr ibn-Warān (74/693), as we shall see later. Meanwhile the intensity of Khārijite assaults were causing concern, and Muhallab was short of men and supplies due to the jealousy of Bishr, who did his best to thwart the activities of Muhallab and bring his family to shame.¹ The death of Bishr in 74/693 came as a relief to the Baṣrī forces facing the Khawārij and they deserted en masse. The gravity of the situation called for the repressive measures of al-Ḥajjāj (75-95/695-714) who followed Bishr. His stern proclamations and a few executions sent the people of Baṣra in their thousands to reinforce the troops of al-Muhallab,² and he himself led a contingent to cover Muhallab's rear. Al-Ḥajjāj's decision to reduce the allowances already approved by Muṣ‘ab³ provoked a rebellion led by ‘Abdallāh ibn-al-Jarūd of ‘Abd-al-Qays. Al-Ḥajjāj was on the verge of destruction when the tribal affinity (‘asabiyya) of his stock,

¹. cf. Pellat, 270; Wellhausen, Arab Kingdom, 227-228.
². Ṭab., 11, 873-4.
³. Ibid.
Qays, came to his rescue. They declared, 'We shall never allow a Qaysite to be murdered and plundered'. This gave al-Ḥajjāj a breathing space to organize his forces and weaken the ranks of his adversaries and finally liquidate their leaders. The revolt was, in essence, a reflection of tribal jealousies. The Rabī‘a and Azd saw in the appointment of al-Ḥajjāj a triumph for Ṭuğar, while Tamīm viewed in it the supremacy of Qays. Al-Ḥajjāj did not take long to justify their suspicions and fears by indicating his preference for his own people, Qays. By now it had become evident that the authority of the state could not be effectively maintained without the backing of powerful tribal support.

The repressive measures of al-Ḥajjāj which produced social and religious upheavals, in addition to his preference to Qays, precipitated the rebellion of ‘Abd-ar-Rahmān ibn-Muḥammad ibn-al-Ash‘ath in 81/701. His defeat left Qays in complete control of the whole of Iraq and the East. Al-Ḥajjāj was quick to remove Yazīd ibn-al-Muhallab the Yemenite from Khurāsān and replace him by a Qaysite, Qutayba ibn-Muḥammad of Bāhila. He persecuted and imprisoned the Muhallabids until 90/709 when they escaped from prison and sought refuge with Sulaymān ibn-‘Abd-al-Ġalīk, then the governor of Palestine, who interceded on their behalf to the caliph al-Walīd, who

1. Ibn-Ath., iv, 311.
2. Ţab., op.cit.; Ibn-Ath., iv, 312-14.
3. cf. Ḥub., Kāmil, iii, 179-180 for an example of his Ṭuğarī ‘aṣabiyya.
pardoned them.\textsuperscript{1} Meanwhile, al-Ḥajjāj built his capital in Wāsita, between Baṣra and Kūfa,\textsuperscript{2} and from there his Syrian garrison held all those territories in submission until his death in 95/714.

The ultimate result of the Umayyad policy was that the caliphs in the latter part of their reign appeared to be the heads of particular parties rather than the sovereigns of a united empire.\textsuperscript{3} Thus the accession of Sulaymān to the Umayyad throne in 96/715 brought about a reversal of policy by favouring the Yemenite against the Qaysite party. This produced repercussions in Iraq and Khurāsān. It spelled the decline of the Qaysite power which had been dominant for about 20 years. Qutayba was killed in Khurāsān by the combined forces of Yemen, Rabī‘a and Tamīm,\textsuperscript{4} and Yazīd ibn-al-Muhallab was reinstated as governor of Iraq\textsuperscript{5} and then of Khurāsān in 97/716.

The short-lived attempt of ‘Umar II in 99/717 to overhaul the system and inject some fresh blood was destined to fail. He imprisoned Yazīd ibn-al-Muhallab and tried to stop the tribal drift but to no avail. His early death in 101/719-20 brought Yazīd ibn-‘Abd-al-Malik, who under the influence of his Muḍarite mother patronized the Qaysite party. Meanwhile, Yazīd ibn-al-Muhallab, forestalling the caliph's

\begin{itemize}
  \item 1. Ibn-Ath., iv, 207, 215, 223.
  \item 2. Ṭab., ii, 1125-6.
  \item 3. cf. Hitti, History of the Arabs, 281.
  \item 4. Ṭab., ii, 1289-98.
  \item 5. Ibid., 1305.
\end{itemize}
designs against him, managed to escape from prison and attempted the capture of Baṣra in the face of strong resistance by Qays and Tamīm. His defeat by Maslama ibn-‘Abd-al-Malik eliminated the danger of a Yemenite triumph in the eastern flank of the empire, a danger which forced the hostile camps of Qays and Tamīm to compose their differences in the face of the common enemy. But relations between them were soon exacerbated when Yazīd II appointed ‘Umar ibn-Hubayra, a Qaysite of Fazāra, as governor of Iraq. The shift to the Yemenite axis by Hishām in 105/723 set the ‘Adnānī versus Qaḥṭānī or Yemenite conflict in motion. He dismissed ‘Umar ibn-Hubayra from Iraq, and appointed Khalid ibn-‘Abdallāh al-Qasrī, a Yemenite, as a governor over Iraq, and Khūrasān in 106/724.1 The policy of al-Qasrī was fanatically anti-Muṭrār. He imprisoned his Qaysite predecessor Ibn-Hubayra and the Tamīmīte poet al-Farazdaq, and killed ‘Umar ibn-Yazīd al-Usaydi,2 while his brother Asad persecuted many of them in Khūrasān. The common danger brought Qays and Tamīm once more together as Muṭrār versus Yemen and Rabī‘a. This explains why a poet like al-Farazdaq praised Ibn-Hubayra when he fled from prison after he had lampooned him previously,3 while Qays appealed to Hishām for the release of al-Farazdaq. The two factions were unanimous in complaining of the repressive policy of the Yemenite Qasrī. Hishām responded by dismissing

1. Ṭab., ii, 1484.
2. Ibid., 1495.
3. Ibid., 1497-8; Ibn-Ath., v, 56.
Khalid al-Qasrī from Khurasan, but the Muḍarites maintained their pressure until he was removed altogether from Iraq in 120/738. Muḍar asserted its power by the appointment of Yusuf ibn-‘Umar ath-Thaqafī (120-126/738-744)¹ over Iraq and Naṣr ibn-Sayyar over Khurasan.

The fact that the rich provinces to the east became the fulcrum of political activity, thus reducing the role of Baṣra to that of echoing, on the whole, the distant confrontations, was not without salutary effects on the urban development of the garrison town.

ii. SOCIAL DEVELOPMENT

The preceding analysis of the political forces impinging on the community of Baṣra sheds some light on the austere conditions attending the development of the muṣr. Taken in isolation, these political conflicts present a picture of utter degradation and decay which is at variance with what was really taking place. The picture has to be corrected by considering the other factors which helped the systematic growth of the town despite the powerful forces militating against its development as an urban centre.

1. Tribalism in urban setting:

   The centrifugal forces of tribalism which tended to undermine the basis of urban life, were being eroded through-

   1. Ţab., ii, 1658, 1717, 1725; Ibn-Ath., v, 163.
out by subtle forces working for reconciliation and harmony within the town. The small number of people who settled there - it is reported that one slaughtered she-camel was enough for them at first¹ - increased rapidly with the increasing tempo of conquests. In just over 20 years the number of able-bodied men registered in the Diwan was reckoned at 60,000 in addition to their women, children, clients and slaves.² With the exception of a few prominent men like some Companions of the Prophet and men of comparable standing, the vast majority of these people emigrated as part and parcel of clans or tribes and settled in the misr, as noted earlier, according to tribal divisions. The preponderance of the 'Adnani Bedouin tribes whose adherence to desert customs and tribal affinity (‘asabiyya) has been noted earlier, had been in marked contrast with the situation in Kufa where the majority was drawn from Yemenite tribes who were relatively more used to organized control.³

It has been indicated that despite the division of the town into tribal sections the administrative powers were vested in the governor of the misr who was answerable to the central government. The akhmas themselves were, in part, a by-product of conditions prevailing in the misr at the time. Administrative and military considerations were paramount in their creation. They were in a sense administrative

---

¹ Yaq., i, 641.
² Tab., i, 3370.
³ Massignon, Kufa (Arabic trans., 12-13).
divisions as was the case in the asbā' of Kūfa, and the army divisions were in line with them. The Arabs had to adapt their desert institutions to the new conditions of urban settlements. The ancient clan system "'ashīra" was convenient from an administrative and political point of view. The system was tuned to general Islamic conceptions and was adopted in the misr. The members of the clan had common rights and duties before the law. For instance they inherited the estates of the heirless member, and paid the blood-money collectively in the case of unpremeditated killing by one of their members. But this responsibility did not extend beyond the members of the clan who were already registered in the Dīwan of pensions in the misr.¹ This in effect meant that the members of the clan settled in the misr and included in the Dīwan were cut off from their kinsmen in the desert.² Due to the unsystematic emigration of clans they were not used as a basis for the distribution of pensions at first. The discrepancy in the membership of clans forced the adoption of other units called 'irāfas. A limited amount of money would be allotted to each 'irāfa for distribution. The money would be given to the leaders of the akhmās (or asbā' in Kūfa) who would hand it to the 'arīfs and their assistants for distribution.³ This system led inevitably to the subdivision of larger clans into smaller units for the purpose of distribution.

3. Taḥ., 1, 2496; Al-‘Alī, 98-99.
The anarchy following the death of 'Uthmān brought the wave of conquests almost to a standstill and disrupted the flow of revenue from the eastern provinces to Baṣra. Ziyād reorganized the administration of the town by making the clan as such a financial unit and appointed a 'arīf responsible for the distribution of the 'aṭā', thus making the financial system agree with the social system which rested on the clan. The 'arīfs were responsible in addition for recruitment when required,¹ and were influential as agents of the government with their people.²

The Diwān system created a sort of homogeneity between the tribes who received more or less equal stipends from the state, but the system did not cater for the majority of the non-Arabs or the Arabs who were not actually enrolled in the Register.³ For the major duty of the pensioners "ahl al-‘aṭā" had been to serve in the army and the clan was taken as the recruiting unit and was obliged to bring forward a definite number of warriors on demand. The clan thus seemed to represent the smallest military unit in the army. It also seems that military considerations dictated further the grouping of clans into larger units of related ancestry⁴ as was reflected in the Battle of the Camel where three larger groups emerged as Tamīm, Bakr and Azd,⁵ each of which

1. Ibid., ii, 866, 870, 902; cf. al-'Alī, 37ff.
2. Ibn-Sa'd, Tabaqāt, v, 293.
3. Tab., 1, 2414 where 'Umar I is reported to have said, "The fay' is solely for the people of amṣār and those who joined them and lived among them. No one else is entitled to it'.
5. Tab., 1, 3169, 3179, 3311.
comprised three clans each with an independent leader.

The reorganization of Ziyād took as its base the division of the town into akhmas, each comprising a number of clans each with a chief with definite responsibilities. But the authority of the parent tribe was not always overriding over its clans which continued to be the basic units in the social, financial and administrative system, and their members continued to bear the name of their common ancestor rather than that of their tribal ancestor. In fact conflicts and rivalries between related clans resulted in weakening the solidarity of the tribal block as was reflected in the stand of Tamīm during the Battle of the Camel when it divided into three groups.\(^1\) But, as the political analysis showed, the tribal group was important in the major disputes in view of the bigger weight and the ability to protect its members more effectively than the smaller clans. Furthermore it was more convenient for the government to deal with the relatively more powerful representatives of the larger tribal groups.

The exclusive nature of the Dīwan system played some part in weakening tribal solidarity, as hinted earlier. This demanded the enrolment of those in active service to the exclusion of all others. The ceiling was determined by the demand for fresh warriors, which was in turn determined by the level of actual fighting involved. It was inevitable that as revenues fell short of accommodating the larger increase in population, more and more Arab emigrants who were

\(^1\) Tab., i, 3179.
not in receipt of stipends found themselves outside the effective control of the clan. Many of these had to gain their livelihood by engaging in trade and similar occupations. The nature of these occupations would oblige them to establish new relations based on mutual interest with other people not related to them by blood. The growth of such relationships was destined to drive many people to jettison all sorts of tribal trappings.

2. The growth of an oligarchy:

Urban life with its inevitable restrictions and obligations was destined to bring about profound changes in the lives and relations of the Arab tribes who chose to settle in the migr. The gearing of the whole tribal system, as noted above, to the administrative machinery of the government, led inevitably to an appreciable decline in the authority of the tribes. The political efficacy of the tribe and the bond between its members based on blood relationship were appreciably weakened by the very act of settling inside the migr and submitting to the authority of the emir, governor, who did not derive his powers from the bond of blood. His jurisdiction which covered the whole migr, and sometimes extended beyond, tended to limit the sphere of influence of tribal chiefs who were themselves in most cases appointed by the central government.¹ The gradual increase in the powers of the emir invariably diminished the freedom of action of the tribes.

¹. cf. Bayān, i, 200-1; ʿīd, 74; ʿIqd, i, 296.
At the beginning the emir found the maintenance of peace and order an intolerable task due to the intractability of the Bedouins and their adherence to their nomadic practices. But as his powers gradually became tangible and effective, he became more and more the central figure to whom allegiance had to be paid. His control over the financial system and his influence on tribal leaders increasingly forced those leaders to vie with each other in gaining his favours, in order to enjoy a greater measure of authority over their own people on that account. This evidently resulted in the erosion of their effective power and the decline of their importance. It was highly unlikely that the Bedouin community would be able to maintain rigidly and for long the balance between its inherited institutions and the rising authority of the emir, which was invincible. The growth of the misr necessitated the erection of a kind of administrative machinery which required the employment of officials to run it. Most of these were drawn at first from non-Arabs who had no tribes to support them and so their loyalty was solely to the emir; this helped to consolidate his powers. The police force was an important instrument which the emir relied upon to entrench his power. The earliest example was the 400 Sayabija who had been entrusted with guarding the treasury and the prison since the time of Abū-Mūsā. Ziyād created a bodyguard of 500 commanded by two

1. Ansāb, ivB, 29.
2. Ţab., i, 3125.
prominent Arabs. The 'arīfs were an important instrument in carrying out the directives of the emir. The chiefs of the akhmās were likewise under his jurisdiction and whatever power left to them was limited to their tribes.

The early emirs used to command the armies in person, but with the expansion of conquests and the increase in administrative responsibilities, they gradually delegated this duty to prominent men who were appointed according to their power and standing among their tribesmen. This in turn drove these men to take especial interest in the welfare of their tribes from which they derived part of their power. But with the establishment of the empire and the decline of conquests, the state was more in need of administrators to run the conquered lands than military leaders. The administrative ability was, on the whole, more important than the measure of tribal support enjoyed by the candidate. The advantages that accrued from such posts were evident. The way to secure them was not through the clans or tribes, but through the emir. This enhanced the prestige and authority of the latter and caused all those who aspired to occupy administrative posts like 'āmil, 'arīf, qāḍī, etc., to attach themselves to the inner circle that surrounded the governor. An index of the magnitude of this tendency was the decision

1. Ibid., ii, 79.
2. Ansāb, ivB, 79.
3. A proverb was coined in Baṣra during the governorship of Ziyād: 'How nice is the imāra even over stones', Bal., Futūḥ, 390.
of Ziyād to register 500 of the shaykhs of Baṣra in the Dīwān as his companions and offer them allowances on that account ranging between 300 and 500 dirhems, presumably in addition to their regular stipends. A number of the Companions of the Prophet were employed by Ziyād.  

All this tended to increase the number of highly placed men whose personal interests increasingly came to be linked with those of the emir and his administration. This oligarchy increased its powers progressively at the expense of the tribal community and other groups which were gradually disarmed. It was only in times of general chaos when the iron hand of this administrative machinery was lifted, that these elements found their chance and wrought havoc in the miṣr.

The power of the emir and the efficacy of his coercive machinery reached such heights under figures like Ziyād, his son ‘Ubaydallāh (41-64/661-684) and al-Ḥājjāj (75-95/695-714) that reactions and criticisms of official policy had to take violent courses as was the case with the different groups of Khawārij, Shi‘ites and others. The rulers in their desire to establish their authority utilized all forms of persuasion and intimidation. They used the poets and the qussās to propagate their points of view and lampoon their enemies.

1. Taḥ, ii, 78.
2. Ibid., 79.
The profusion of panegyric poetry was a response to a real demand. Threats, \(^1\) imprisonment, which was particularly repulsive to the Arabs, deportations\(^2\) and ultimately force were used to break any resistance.

It is worth noting here that the excessive zeal of the various groups of Khawārij in their enmity to the Umayyad regime dealt Baṣra a severe blow. Their fierce and incessant attacks disrupted the flow of its trade and endangered the life of its citizens. The wealthy classes and the ordinary people were deeply affected. This external danger brought the divergent groups together on many occasions,\(^3\) which strengthened the hand of the state.

3. Influence of the bādiya and Khurāsān:

The picture is complicated by yet another factor. For the life of the garrison town was not cut off from its neighbouring desert "bādiyat al-Baṣra", where life continued largely unaffected by the subtle influences of urban dwelling. Larger sections of the tribes, part of whom settled in Baṣra, continued to roam the desert in search of water and pasture. Their pattern of existence was hardly disturbed by the upheaval caused by the new religion. They persisted in practising their pre-Islamic customs undeterred by any effective official control. With the exception of the suʿāt (tax-collectors) who came at certain periods of the year, the

\(^1\) cf. Bal., \textit{Ansāb}, iv\(\text{B}\), 89
official presence was not often felt.\textsuperscript{1} But these Bedouins were linked with the migr in various ways. The trading activities of the town attracted them and the famous market of al-Wirbad which catered largely for their wants was an index of their important role in the commercial life of the town. They had relatives and resident members of their clans in the migr. Furthermore they provided a constant source from which fresh recruits could be drawn for the army. In times of crisis when the authority of the government was at its lowest, they often swelled the ranks of their urban fellow tribesmen and took part in their fights.\textsuperscript{2} The waves of violence and anarchy which often threatened the life of Basra were often due to their presence in the migr in numbers larger than could be accounted for by the Diwan. The encroachment of this Bedouin element on the urban life of Basra often detracted from the effectiveness of the other factors of stabilization treated earlier.

This pull by the neighbouring desert is accentuated by that of remote Khurasan. The political ramifications of this factor were, as noted earlier, considerable and so were

\textsuperscript{1} cf. Mub., Kamîl, ii, 130 for the account on an Arab shaykh who was not aware of the death of 'Umar I, some time after 65 A.H.; Hanâsa, ed. Freytag, 800 for an anecdote about a Bedouin who never heard the adhân before coming to Basra.

\textsuperscript{2} cf. Kamîl, ii, 129 where a specific reference is made to the Bedouins of Tamîm who swelled the ranks of fellow townsmen in the Battle of Wirbad after death of Yazîd I. cf. Tab, i, 3080, where ārâb are specifically mentioned in the murder of 'Uthmân. cf. Mub., Kamîl (ed. Marsafî) ii, 124, for an account of a war that started in bâdiya and extended to Basra.
their social consequences. It has been pointed out that the considerable number of the troops in Başra which had settled in garrison camps in the East found themselves increasingly alienated by tribal jealousies and frictions. The army service which gave prominence to tribal affiliation tended to bolster up the tribal spirit. The difficult conditions in which these tribesmen found themselves in these regions forced them gradually to break away from the bonds that their settlement in Başra had forged. The numerous forces that had impinged on their lives in the miṣr and tended to reduce tribal friction were suddenly removed in these remote regions. They found themselves in conditions of fighting and relative freedom from control similar to those of their pre-Islamic days. The prospects of new riches and their realisation of their strength and their remoteness from any direct control by the state all tended to assert tribal solidarity as being the most effective device for rallying support and securing protection in those wild conditions. The fact that the revenue of Başra was largely derived from the labours of these men explains the powerful influence the events of the East exerted on the daily life of Başra.

At times it looked as though the influence of these Bedouins, near and far, on the political and social life of Başra outweighed that of the settled and domesticated  

1. cf. Tab., ii, 1301 where the Tamīmite Waki‘ on being requested to lash a drunkard and not to put him to the sword, retorted, "I never punish with the whip, the sword is my only means of punishment", in accordance with the Jahili practice.
community which was often caught between the two conflicting
tendencies of tribalism and urbanism. The stormy history of
Baṣra during the Umayyad epoch could be viewed as a protracted
struggle between these two divergent forces. The struggle
often took various shapes according to the attending
circumstances and the results were always complicated and
difficult to assess due to the complexity and interaction of
the forces involved, both internally and externally. This
paradox is reflected in the fact that while the town was more
often than not the stage of fights and rebellions, very
powerful religious and literary currents were gathering speed
and steadily transforming the life and the fortunes of the
miṣr.

4. The qurra':

The general effect of Islamic teachings stressing the
unity of faith irrespective of lineage were slowly but
steadily tempering the scene in various ways. The most
important sector where this influence had been greatly felt
was that of the qurra', the reciters and students of the
Qurʿān, from whose ranks a good number of the Khawārīj
emerged. Abū-Ḥusayn al-Aṣḥābī is credited with the earliest
attempt to teach the Qurʿān in the garrison camp. He asked
ʿUmar I to send with him a number of the Companions of the
Prophet to teach the people their religion, to which request
ʿUmar responded by permitting 10\(^1\) or 29\(^2\) Companions to

1. Dīnawarī, op. cit., 125.
2. Ṭab., i, 2531.
accompany him. A reciter himself, he was enthusiastic about spreading the discipline. To create the incentive he suggested to ‘Umar that the Qurā‘ah should be privileged with a higher stipend, irrespective of their clans or their participation in the early conquests. This arrangement encouraged a large number of members of tribes and new converts to occupy themselves with learning and reciting the Qur’ān and to form, in time, a well-knit group capable of exerting pressure. They played important roles in the social and political life of the town. They fought as a distinct group in Siffin and it was they who precipitated the deadlock of the arbitration. Their important contribution in sponsoring the cause of the new non-Arab converts was demonstrated by their stand against the measures of al-Ḥajjāj when he ordered them to be sent back to their villages. They joined forces with Ibn-al-Ash‘ath and formed a separate division with a leader of their own. The defeat of this rebellion, however, shook their stand in the town immensely, and exposed them to the punitive measures of al-Ḥajjāj.

5. The mawāli:

While the purely Arab elements were struggling for supremacy and giving the town an Arab character through their preponderance at the earlier stages, another development

1. Ibn-Sa‘d, iv, 11; Abū-Nu‘aym, Ḥilya, ii, 94; Dīnawarī, 125.
2. Taḥ., ii, 1122; Bal., Ansāb, xi (Ahlwardt), 336.
3. Ansāb, op. cit., 336.
4. al-Qādir, iii, 367-368; cf. Nöldeke-Schwally, Geschichte des Qurān, iii, 163-169; Pellat, Milieu, 73-80.
was slowly but progressively modifying the picture. The passionate desire of the Arabs to preserve their identity by keeping aloof from their subject nations\(^1\) soon proved to be a contradiction in terms. The early settlers in the garrison camp soon realized the necessity of employing all sorts of professional men to make life in the \(\mu\text{i}\text{\textgreek{g}}\text{r}\) possible. They had to keep their hands free from the drudgery of manual work to devote their energies to military enterprises. In addition to the need of builders and of skilled labour to dig canals and erect bridges, the rapid increase in the acquisition of cultivable land around \(\text{B}\text{a}\text{s}\text{r}\text{a}\), the majority of which was \(\text{\textgreek{u}}\text{\textgreek{s}\text{h}\text{r}}\text{\textgreek{i}}, \) i.e. Muslim-owned, in contrast to the \(\text{K}\text{h}\text{a}\text{r}\text{a}\text{j}\text{i}\) lands which remained on the whole in the hands of their previous owners as was the case of \(\text{K}\text{\textgreek{u}\text{r}}\text{a}, \) created a strong demand for agricultural labour, which could be met only by drawing indigenous farmers from the countryside. Furthermore, the Arabs took over the Sassanid machinery of administration en masse and with it went its staff who were mainly of Persian stock. War prisoners and slaves were brought into the town in their thousands.

Since its inception more and more of these non-Arabs came to participate actively in the social and political life of the \(\mu\text{i}\text{\textgreek{g}}\text{r}\). During the governorship of \(\text{A}\text{b}\text{\textgreek{u}}\text{-}\text{\textgreek{m}\text{u}\text{\textgreek{s}\text{\textgreek{\texta}}}}\) about 4,000 Asawira, who had been a detachment of the Sassanid army, accepted Islam and were given equal status

1. cf. \(\text{T}\text{\textgreek{a}}\text{b}., \text{i, 254}\text{\textgreek{g}}\).
2. \(\text{I}\text{\textgreek{\texts\texta}}\text{\textgreek{\textr}\text{\textgreek{h}}\text{\textgreek{r}}\text{\textgreek{i}}, \text{\textgreek{n}\text{\textgreek{a}}\text{\textgreek{s}\text{\textgreek{\texta}}}{\text{\textgreek{l}}}}\), \text{\textgreek{8}\text{\textgreek{o}}}; \text{\textgreek{I}}\text{\textgreek{b}}\text{-}\text{\textgreek{\texth\textw\textm\textq}{\text{\textm}}}, \text{\textgreek{\texts\text\texta}}\text{\textgreek{\textr}}\text{\textgreek{\texta}}, \text{\textgreek{224}}\).
3. \(\text{I}\text{\textgreek{\texts\texta}}\text{\textgreek{\textr}\text{\textgreek{h}}\text{\textgreek{\texts\texta}}\text{\textgreek{\textr}}\text{\textgreek{i}}, \text{\textgreek{op\textc{\texta}}\text{\textgreek{c\textc{\textc{\texti\textt\textt\textt\textt}}}}\text{\textgreek{c\textc{\textc{\texti\textt\textt\textt\textt}}}}\text{\textgreek{i}}, \text{\textgreek{82}}\).
with the Arab warriors, as far as the stipends went, and were further permitted to settle in Baṣra, where they became clients of the tribe of Tamīm.¹ The Zuṭṭ and Sayābiya who were in all probability of Indian extraction² performed the duties of security forces and prison guards. The fact that they were entrusted with guarding the treasury in 36/657 during the troubles following the death of 'Uthmān, indicated that their services were long appreciated by the ruling Arabs. Commercial activities provided vast opportunities for all kinds of skills and professions. The settlement of these non-Arabs in the miṣr reached such an extent as to frighten the ruling circles. It is reported that Muʿāwiya ibn-Abī-Sufyān intimated to al-ʾAḥnaf ibn-Qays and Samura ibn-Jundab, both from Baṣra, that he dreaded their overwhelming increase and feared that they might stage a coup (wathba) against the Arabs and undermine their authority, and to forestall that he contemplated exterminating half of them, leaving the other half to look after the market and the roads. The report adds that al-ʾAḥnaf pleaded on their behalf, while Samura was in favour of partial genocide. Muʿāwiya is said to have accepted the stand of al-ʾAḥnaf.³ It seems that he satisfied himself with removing only a large number of Zuṭṭ and Sayābiya to the coasts of Syria.⁴

¹ Bal., Futūḥ, 520.
² Ibid., 522; cf. Pellat, 37-38.
³ 'Iqd, iii, 364.
⁴ Futūḥ, 524.
In a regimented society such as existed in Basra where the Arab element was supreme the most feasible way to secure the interests of other groups was to utilize the system of walā', clientship, and establish some link with one of the Arab clans or families who would act as patrons of the mawla. The tribal system of jiwar, granting refuge, together with the ancient system of walā' were operative in the misr and groups and individuals could avail themselves of them if they wanted to lead any effective life at all in the town. In actual fact the establishment of this clientship relation with an Arab patron, be it a tribe, a clan, a family or an individual, was the most effective means, if not the only one, by which a non-Arab individual could participate effectively in the social life of the town at first.

It is important to note here that the term 'mawālī' is a generic appellation designating different categories of people. It included liberated slaves who were obliged to maintain their relations with their former masters on certain conditions, as well as free non-Arabs who voluntarily opted for attaching themselves to an Arab family. All of them, however, bear the name of their Arab patrons preceded by the word "mawla" to indicate that their relationship with the patron is a social and not a blood relationship. The arrangement entailed, on the whole some privileges and imposed certain duties. Most of the mawalī were not entitled to 'atā', stipends, and even when they had it, it was not always equal to that of the Arabs.1 The free clients represented

1. Mas'ūdī, Murūj, v, 174; Ansāb, ivB, 58-9.
most of the professional classes who settled in Baṣra and put themselves under the protection of some influential families a position from which they derived certain benefits. It was this class which was most active. They boasted of a noble origin and were undoubtedly the product of a higher culture and many of them adopted Islam and felt equal with the Arabs. They took to studying the Qur'ān and Arabic language with vigour. Most of them were not employed in military service because of their civilian upbringing, and their relationship with their Arab patrons was not strong enough to commit them to go to war with them. It seemed that their number was greater at the beginning when the authority of the tribe was stronger, but later with the increasing powers of the emir and the gradual growth of urban life, they did not feel the need for the protection of any tribe.

The various non-Arab groups availed themselves of these opportunities at an early date. It is reported that the Asāwirā became the clients of Banū-Saʿd of Tamīm, while the Zuṭṭ and Sayābija became clients of Banū-Ḥanżala of Tamīm. Ziyād is credited with building a quarter to settle 4,000 Bukhārīs, often referred to as the Bukhārīs of Ziyād. Some Persianized Arabs like Banū-ʾl-ʿAmm (or al-ʿAmī) of Ahwāz attached themselves to Tamīm also.

1. Bal., Futūh, 520.
2. Ibid.
4. Ṭab., i, 2537-8.
The arrangement was not confined only to specific integrated groups; individuals too availed themselves of it. The élite of the Sassanid Society who had not been captured or enslaved, the learned classes, the administrators and professionals whose services were badly needed all resumed their services under the new administration. Despite the fact that Persian continued to be the official language of the Dīwāns for over half a century,\(^1\) these mawāli realized early in their career in the new regime that they had no proper place in an Arab Islamic society without first gaining an initial footing in the social structure, to which their attachment to Arab patrons was only a prelude. They felt that their integration in the new society depended largely on the degree of Arabicization and Islamization they achieved. The clientship relationship between the Arab and the non-Arab, where the former was the dominant force, had to reach its logical conclusion of complete Arabicization before the latter could stand on equal footing with his patron at least in the formal sphere of linguistic and religious communication. This realization created the insatiable desire among these mawāli to improve their lot and partake of the privileges that the Arabs enjoyed by exerting themselves to master the Arabic language and Islamic religion.

It was not long, however, before they realized that the royal road to equality was hedged with immense obstacles.

\(^1\) Al-Ḥajjāj (75-95 A.H.) is credited with instigating the shift to Arabic, cf. Bayān, iii, 26, note 3.
The clash of interests weighed heavily against the mawālī at first. The Arabs were conscious of their privileged position. Their victory over the Byzantines and Persians put them at the top as a ruling class exploiting all the resources of the empire to advance their fortunes, a fact which heightened the Arab feeling of self-confidence as a distinct élite compared with their subjects. This feeling drove them to discriminate against these mawālī in order to maintain their position of strength, in the social, economic and political spheres. The paradox is that by about 700 A.D. the religion of the Prophet had ceased to be a monopoly of his people, and the Arab Muslims were at last out-numbered by those of the subject nations, notably the Persians. This transformation was rapidly and permanently modifying the civil and religious history not only of Basra but of the whole empire. The vested interests of the Arabs as a ruling class were diametrically opposed to extending voluntarily to these overwhelming masses the rights and privileges which they themselves enjoyed. It was obvious, however, that although these interests were real and tangible, they were grounded on shaky and ephemeral bases. The Arabs' intransigence was contrary to the teachings of their own religion, in the name of which they built the empire and appealed to their subjects. It was essentially the hope to realize that equality which Islam advocated that motivated a large number of these non-Arabs to adopt the new faith. Conversion promised the opening up of new vistas in life which the retention of their
former faith could not have realized. For the Arab empire was, after all, theoretically a theocracy. Islam was the common factor between the Arab and non-Arab. By accepting Islam the latter acquired in theory rights similar to those of the former who in practice resisted any such claims. It soon dawned on these non-Arabs that in an Arab hegemony, Islam alone was not sufficient to realize their ambitions. They had, in addition, to penetrate the wall of Arab chauvinism. The system of clientage, and the agonizing schemes by which many of them sought to identify themselves with the Arabs, as we shall see later on, all failed to satisfy all their desires, although they paved the way for self-aggrandizement and improving one's lot.

The cumulative effect of the movement was far-reaching. The pressure of the mawālī on the mīṣr reached at times dangerous levels, as noted earlier. The result was the depletion of the countryside and the subsequent failure of agriculture which ended in a sharp decline in the level of revenues. The crisis forced al-Ḥajjāj to resort to the drastic measures of deporting the villagers wholesale to their original homesteads and subjecting them to taxes from which they had been exempted by the act of conversion. The counter measures of 'Umar II attempted to rectify the situation and offer them some redress. The bitterness these measures induced was acute and deep. On the other hand, the sheer weight of these overwhelming masses on the resources of the mīṣr and their intense rivalry with the Arabs in all walks
of life engendered the fear and jealousy of the Arabs who felt their entrenched position threatened. Their monopoly of power was rapidly undermined by their gradual transformation from an essentially military class to that of the ordinary subjects of the empire. To stem the rising tide of the mawālī and block their progress the Arabs struck by imposing on them all kinds of humiliating and discriminatory measures. They were not allowed, for example, to occupy certain public posts which carried some authority like that of the judge, or the commander of the army. It was not until the turn of the century that the first mawālī judge, al-Ḥasan al-Baṣrī, was appointed in Baṣra at the time of 'Umar II. They were prohibited from marrying Arab women, and were exposed to humiliating penalties if they infringed the ban.

The smooth working of this elaborate defensive mechanism was impaired by the tendency of the Arabs to marry the mawālī females or take them as concubines. The extent of this process of intermarriage could be gauged by the plea of

1. cf. 'Īd, iii, 364-8 for some examples.
2. When al-Ḥajjāj appointed Sa‘īd ibn-Jubayr as qādi over Kūfa, people complained, "None but an Arab is fit to be a judge". Ṭubb., Kāmil (Wright), 182.
3. cf. Ṭab., ii, 1347; Ibn-Sa‘d, v, 251; Wāḵī, Akhbar al-Qudāt, ii, lff.
4. Examples of mawālī marrying Arab women are numerous, cf. Ch.V, p. 293 below; cf. Līsān, x, 103 for an excerpt of a letter of ‘Umar II dealing with such marriages; Arab reactions were sometimes severe as in the case of the famous Baṣrī ‘Abdallāh ibn-‘Awn who had married an Arab and was flogged by Bīlāl ibn-Abī-Burda, Ibn-Sa‘d, vii, part 2, 26; cf. Agh., xiv, 15 for another example; al-Ḥajjāj himself whose origin was suspect was forced by ‘Abd-al-Malik to divorce his Qurashī wife on this account, ‘Īd, i, 302.
of Ahnaf ibn-Qays, the leader of Tamīm to Muʿawiyah on behalf of the mawāli, alluded to earlier,¹ when he said, "I cannot condone [the killing] of my maternal brother, maternal uncle and mawla; we have already shared with them blood relationships".² The products of these intermarriages continued to leaven the social and cultural structure of the town. Children were inevitably imbued with their mothers' culture and non-Arab traits, and famous figures like Ḥubaydallāh ibn-Ziyād, whose pronunciation of Arabic was impaired by living among his uncles, the Asāwira,³ and others⁴ were early examples of this social and cultural cross-fertilization. The Persian element became so dominant in Baṣra by the end of the Umayyad period that the whole character of the town reflected its traits. Abu-ʾAmr ibn-al-ʿAlā, the distinguished Arab philologist is said to have told the Kūfans: "You have the skilfulness and bragging of Nabataeans while we inherited the shrewdness and forbearance of Persians".⁵ Their preponderance ensured the uninterrupted running of the administrative, economic and cultural life of the misr, even during the most chaotic periods when the tribes were engaged in killing each other.

¹. Supra, 41.
². ʿIqd, iii, 364.
³. Bayān, i, 75; ii, 167.
⁵. Bayān, ii, 86.
6. Trade:

The development of Basra into a thriving commercial centre provided the solid framework which guaranteed the unimpeded growth of the _migr_, even when its function as a military post no longer justified its expansion and progress. Commercial activity enormously aided the process of transformation of the early military and semi-tribal camp into a settled and prosperous community.

Trade being held in high regard by Islam, many of the Companions of the Prophet and others who settled in Basra devoted their energies to the lucrative pursuit. A good number of the commercially minded Qurashites and Thaqafites settled there and engaged in commercial activities. Men like Anas ibn-Malik, Abu-Bakra, Nafi' ibn-al-Ḥarīth, Ziyād and his sons accumulated vast riches. The device by which a man could send a 'substitute' to fight in his place, allowed a vast number of influential men to settle in Basra and participate actively in the economic life of the town. The emirs and their administrative staff, the nature of whose posts required their presence inside the town could effectively engage in commerce and secure vast profits. The Persian capitalists, traders and professionals conducted their business freely, protected by the state or the system of _walā‘_, while the government employed some of them in

1. cf. Ibn-Sa'd, vii, Part 1, 11 where he is said to be "the most covetous of money among the Companions of Muḥammad"; cf. Ibn-al-‘Imād, _Shadharat_, i, 100-1.
2. Ibn-Sa’d, vii, Part 1, 50.
departments like that of minting, tax-collection, clerical and administrative jobs which opened opportunities for many of them to carry on commercial activities and amass riches.

Under governors like ‘Abdallāh ibn-‘Āmir, who is credited with the task of building the market place,1 Ziyād,2 ‘Ubaydallāh and al-Ḥajjāj many canals were dug and streams were cleared to facilitate transportation. Baṣra was quick to replace the ancient part of Ubulla as the major commercial station for the old trade route from India and the East. The famous trade fair of Mirbad increasingly attracted Bedouin traders and captured the major part of trade that used to be conducted in the other fairs in Eastern Arabia in pre-Islamic days. The fair provided in addition to trade, a meeting place for tribes, Bedouins and townsmen. Its contribution to the cultural life of the mīṣr was immense and profound.

How far this commercial activity directly affected the tribal structure in the mīṣr is difficult to ascertain. In certain respects the increase of the number of rich men in a clan occasionally had the effect of consolidating rather than breaking it up. For the clan used to benefit from its rich members who gave liberally to the poor and needy and others, and this helped, in many cases, to dissipate riches3 and prevent the creation of a stable class of capitalists. This perhaps explains the scarcity of reports about any marked

1. Ibn-Sa‘d, v, 33.
3. cf. Ibn-Sa‘d, iii, 156-157; Ansāb, ivB, 3; v, 257; ‘Uyun, i, 239-250.
hostility against the rich in Basra, and also explains the persistence of a form of tribal structure in Basra for a long time despite the emergence of a good number of rich men in it. On the whole, political considerations were more potent than any other factors in preserving what form of tribalism existed. This is not however to underrate the civilizing element of trade in a cosmopolitan community like that of Basra when compared with another like that of Mecca prior to Islam, where the tribal structure had been reinforced by commercial activities. All the factors treated earlier in connection with urbanization in addition to the presence of a vast section of non-Arab population tended to facilitate the establishment of trade relations between Arabs and non-Arabs which helped detribalization in the long run. Relations based on mutual interest replaced those of kinship. As revenues from war declined more and more Arabs were driven to establish links with non-Arab fellow traders which ultimately affected the overall picture of social structure, judging by the powerful role played by the commercial class in Basra as early as 64/683 when al-Muhallab was obliged to appeal to them for funds to fight the Khawārij.

7. Urban Consciousness:

All these stabilizing factors combined to produce a powerful undercurrent of unity within diversity. The

1. cf. Watt, Muhammad at Mecca; Integration, 5-14.
2. cf. Mub., Kamil (Wright), 627, 665.
parochial element had been present even in tribal matters which usually militate against any attempt to search for identity outside the sanctuary of the tribe. At times this parochialism, the consciousness of being Başrīs, cut across tribal and political differences. Al-Abnaf ibn-Quays, the Tamīmite, was expressing this sentiment early in the life of Başra, when he addressed the hosts of Azd and Rabīʿa (being the adversaries of Muqar to whom al-Abnaf belonged) after the death of Yazīd I in the words: "You are our brothers in religion, our partners in kinship, our neighbours and our hand against the enemy. By God, the Azd of Başra are closer to our hearts than the Tamīm of Kufern, and the Azd of Kufern are closer to our hearts than the Tamīm of Syria...". The division of tribes into splinter groups in the provinces tended, inevitably, to break in various ways the group solidarity that existed inside the parent tribe formerly. The various groups faced different problems in their respective settlements. Every locality moulded the life of the group that settled in it in such a way as to make it different from that of any other related group living in another locality. The interests of the various groups were gradually determined by the circumstances most directly affecting their existence. Circumstances might shape the interests of a group in such a way as to render them antagonistic to those of their brethren in another locality.

It was such considerations, on the whole, that impelled the Kūfān tribes to fight against Bāṣrī tribes related to them in the Battle of the Camel, when the Kūfān Tamīmites struck at their Bāṣrī counterparts as did all the other tribes. The same forces were at work at Șīffīn and other battles where the various sections of the same tribe fought against each other according to their locality and the political candidate they supported. At the height of tribal friction in Khurāsān when Qutayba ibn-Muslim the Bāhilite Bāṣrī, anticipating his dismissal from the governorship by Sulaymān in 96/715, started abusing the various tribes, the majority of whom were of Bāṣrī origin, his own tribe rebuked him by saying: "You have not confined yourself to the Ahl al-ʿĀliya who are your inner and outer dress, but you attacked Bakr who are your supporters ... Tamīm who are your brothers ... and the Azd who are your hand".

Economic necessities sometimes forced them to stand as Bāṣrīs especially in their rivalry with their more prosperous opponent, Kūfā. The communal stand appeared to underlie the passionate appeal of al-ʿĀnafī to ʿUmar I on behalf of Bāṣra when he compared most vividly the misery of his town-

1. cf. Tāb., 1, 3202-3.
2. Ibid., 3287.
3. Ibid., 11, 1289.
4. cf. Thaʿalibī, Lātāʿif, 167-9; Muqaddasī, op. cit., 33; Ibn-Faqīh, 114, 164, 165, 166, 190, 191, 315; Baghdādī, Tarīkh Baghdad, 1, 44, 49.
ship with the prosperity of Kūfa.¹ This solidarity was demonstrated once more when the people of Baṣra stood as a homogeneous group in their dispute with the Kūfans over the possession of certain regions in the conquest of which they had participated.²

These trends and many others underlined the gradual transformation of the concept of ‘asabiyya. The affinity for the tribe was slowly replaced by the affinity for the town. But the process was often slowed down by the negative effects of other developments. The cohesion of the Baṣrī community was often weakened by two tendencies. The diversity of sectional interests deprived the town of the formulation of a strong political line to which a majority could subscribe. At the same time, the fractionization of the major tribes into largely autonomous clans resulted in depriving the tribes and hence the town of any effective and powerful leaders acceptable to all. The most illustrious figure, al-Muhallab, drew his fame from fighting the Khawārij and spent most of his active life outside Baṣra on battlefields. The other important leader, al-ʿAḥnaf,³ the leader of Banū-Saʿd of Tamīm did his best to avoid implicating himself and his people in the major confrontations by advocating and practising neutrality. Perhaps it is due to

1. Ţab., i, 2538-9; Futūḥ, 496-7.
2. Ţab., i, 2672-3.
3. cf. E.I.¹, article by Reckendorf.
this lack of influential local leadership that the vast majority of the town's governors were drawn from outside. Even when the opportunity did offer itself to the people of Baṣra to choose their own governor after the flight of the Umayyad governor, 'Ubaydallāh ibn-Ziyād in 64/683, they agreed on the insignificant Qurashite 'Abdallāh ibn-al-Ḥārith. Because of this fluid situation the aristocracy of Quraysh and Thaqīf, despite their small tribal backing, maintained the balance between the major tribes.

iii. CULTURAL LIFE

The cultural life of Baṣra was a true reflection of its political and social structures. The conflicting tendencies which attended the slow transition of the Arabs from their Bedouin state to that of mature urban life evoked a variety of equally diverse cultural patterns which faithfully depicted the social scene in all its complexity. Social evolution was not, as we have seen, always uniform, and different stages of development could be seen to lie side by side on the same social plane. The picture of Baṣra torn by political and tribal conflicts which represented in essence the pull of traditional nomadic life and its persistence for a long time to plague the life of the garrison town, has validity only when viewed concurrently with the other picture of Baṣra where the solid foundations of social and cultural life were slowly but confidently laid down by the concerted
efforts of its mixed community. On the cultural plane the resurgence of pre-Islamic poetry and its deep influence on the early Umayyad poets was at the same time accompanied and influenced by other cultural movements which eventually transformed the religious, literary and philosophical outlook of the misr.

1. Religious trends:

Although the boastful claim of Kufans that 70 Badrī Companions of the Prophet settled among them while Baṣra had been favoured by the sole presence of ‘Utba ibn Ghazwan,¹ was a gross misrepresentation, it nevertheless indicates the weak impact the majority of the Companions who settled in Baṣra left on posterity. Though Ibn-Sa‘d enumerates over 140 of them² it is safe to assume that most of them had seen the Prophet casually, as members of their tribal delegations in the year of delegations in 9 A.H.,³ and a number of them did not settle in Baṣra itself but in its desert.⁴ Even some of those among them who had been officially dispatched by ‘Umar I to teach the people their religion did not impress their audiences immensely and people used to leave their circles to listen to other Companions.⁵ Perhaps it is due to this early weakness in religious teaching that Baṣra lacked any effective religious leadership to offer guidance.

1. Ibn-Faqīh, 166.
2. Tabaqāt, vii, Part 1, 1-64.
3. 25 are mentioned as members of Tamīmite delegation and 7 of ‘Abd-al-Qays, cf. Ibn-Sa‘d, op.cit.
4. Ibn-Sa‘d, ibid., where many of the Tamīmite Companions, for example, are specifically mentioned.
5. Ibid., 17 where Hishām ibn-‘Āmir complained bitterly of this practice.
in the many crises that rocked the town later on. This was never more apparent than in the attitudes of the Ašḥāb al-Jamal. While ‘Alī was anxious to divert the attention of Ṭalḥa and az-Zubayr from Kūfah "wherein resided the leaders of the Arabs and their distinguished figures",¹ his two contenders were anxious to reach Basra "the forsaken place",² according to their assessment, because it lacked any effective leadership.

The systematic teaching of the Qurʾān which Abū-Ḥūsa had started early in his career as governor by official sanction and encouragement was, however, the most enduring cultural activity in the town. The movement gathered momentum with the increasing development of the miṣr. The qurraʿ, or reciters of the Qurʾān, had reached the number of 300 some time before Abū-Ḥūsā left the town in 29/650,³ and their well-known political activities were an index of the important role they played in the political and social life of Basra. It is important to note here that although the pattern of cultural development in Basra on the whole was a reflection of the cosmopolitan composition of its population, the fervent desire of the non-Arabs to participate actively in the life of the town through mastering the language and religion of the Arabs had been in marked contrast with the apathy and sometimes disdain of the Arab tribesmen to such

1. Tab., i, 3138.
2. Ibid., 3100, 3104.
systematic learning.\textsuperscript{1} Their preoccupation with fighting and the obvious absence of any major material advantage they stood to gain by devoting themselves to religious or other cultural matters, left the mawālī in almost complete control of these cultural domains. Their steadily increasing participation in religious life could be attested by a cursory glance at the tables devoted by Ibn-Sa′d to the four classes of the tabīʿīn, followers of the Companions, in Baṣra. The first class comprising 21 contained 2 mawlas,\textsuperscript{2} the second class of 55 contained 7 mawlas,\textsuperscript{3} the third class of 17 contained 2 mawlas\textsuperscript{4} while the fourth class of 64 contained over 30 mawlas.\textsuperscript{5} Nor was the cultural significance of the mawālī a matter merely of numbers. It is worth mentioning that a number of the early Baṣrī mawālī came originally from ‘Ayn at-Tamr, a Christian fortress north of Kūfa captured by Khalid ibn-al-Walīd in 633, and some of them lived for some time in Arabia proper before moving into Baṣra. Šīrīn, the mawlā of Anas ibn-Mālik lived for some time in Medina,\textsuperscript{6} while Ḫumrān ibn-Abān, the mawlā of the caliph ‘Uthmān played an active role in Medina during the caliphate of the latter.\textsuperscript{7}

3. Ibid., 103-166.
5. Ibid., 14-50.
7. Ibid., 108.
Al-Hasan al-Bashri was born in the neighbourhood of Mecca and brought up in Wadi al-Qura.\(^1\) Abu’l-'Aliya Rufay' ibn Mahrân (d. 90 A.H.) who boasted of having memorized the Qur'an 10 years after the death of the Prophet\(^2\) and is counted among the first class of tabi'ûn, was not content with the communicated tradition available in Basra but had to go to Medina to hear from the Companions in person.\(^3\) It is no wonder that these mawāli dominated the cultural and religious scene in Basra at a very early date. The conspicuous contribution of many of them to the spiritual and cultural life of the town earned them respect and honour from all. Ibn-‘Abbâs is said to have invited Abu’l-'Aliya up to his platform while Quraysh were seated beneath.\(^4\) The famous Companion Anas ibn-Mâlik used to refer enquirers after legal matters to al-Hasan al-Bashri on account of his erudition.\(^5\) The impact of al-Hasan went beyond the cultural sphere to influence the political life of Basra as in the revolt of Ibn-al-Ash'ath when it was suggested to the latter, "If it pleases you that they should be killed around you as they had been killed around the camel of 'A'isha, then force al-Hasan out".\(^6\) His influence was equally potent during the revolt of Yazîd ibn-al-Muhallab in 101/720 when he campaigned against the Muhallabids.\(^7\)

1. Ibid., 114
2. Ibid., 81
3. Ibid., 82
4. Shadharât, i, 102
7. Ṭab., ii, 1391-3; Ibn-Khall. ii, 274-5.
It is also important to note that the majority of these men of learning, whether mawāli or Arabs emphasized in their teachings their loyalty to the idea of jama'a, community, as is reflected in the activities of individuals like 'Imrān ibn-Ḥuṣayn (d. 52/671) and Muṭarrif ibn al-Shikhkhīr (d. after 87/706) who expressed their concern about the jama'a in no uncertain terms. Their general moderation in political and religious matters helped to give the town a generally obedient and Sunnī character. Their incessant attacks on the Khawārij, Shi'ites, Qadariyya, and their general revulsion from those whom they stigmatized as "ahl al-Ahwā", the misguided advocates of ultra religious doctrines incompatible with the traditional Sunnī approach, all tended to alleviate the impact of political and social tensions on the internal life of the town and to rally to them the sympathies of a large section of the population. This moderate attitude explains to a large extent the absence of any strong anti-Arab feeling, shu'ubiyya, among the mawāli who devoted themselves to religious pursuits in comparison with the others engaged in other cultural fields.2

The interaction of cultures from various sources, Persian, Indian, Greek, and others to which the cosmopolitan society of Baṣra acted as a melting pot furnished the early political parties, whether they be Shi'ites, Khawārij,

1. Ibn-Sa'd, op. cit., 104.
'Uthmaniyya, murji'a or others with complicated ideologies which steadily transformed their initial political nature into a more comprehensive philosophical systems taking major theological questions in their stride. Before the end of the Umayyad era the Mu'tazili doctrine was in process of taking shape.\(^1\) It is essential to note here that the relative indifference of the Umayyad regime to the spread and diffusion of ideas as long as they did not challenge their authority facilitated, on the whole, the free exchange of ideas especially on the religious level. Jewish and Christian influences left their mark on traditions, on Qur'anic exegesis and on scholastic schools of thought. The ancient Persian religions were slowly emerging from their hideouts after the early shock they had suffered from the emergence of Islam had subsided. The scarcity of information about this source and its scope and influence is no indication of its magnitude. The lack of interest among the Umayyads to assume the role of protectors of the people's moral and religious life as the 'Abbasid caliphs later claimed to be, offered the fertile soil where all sorts of creeds and religions could grow and prosper. It was only with the accession of the 'Abbasids, whose policy had been, on the whole, to exploit religious feelings for political ends, that attention was focussed on such foreign breeds and the dimensions of their infiltration were then really assessed. By then the mild term of "ahl al-Ahwa" which had been the

familiar appellation of all extreme religious views in the later Umayyad period changed to "az-Zanāḍis"; heretics, in the early 'Abbasid period, and effective measures were taken to stem their rising tide.

2. Philological and Linguistic Studies:

Although the religious studies were inextricably bound up with linguistic studies the real and effective contribution of Basra lay more in the philological and literary than in the religious field. The preponderance of non-Arabs in the town and their unflagging desire to learn the language of their new rulers eventually created a self-perpetuating movement. The early non-Arabs learned the rudiments of the language from the Arabs and they in turn attempted to simplify and systematize the linguistic rules for the benefit of their fellow compatriots. The process, however, proved more complicated, because many important things were at stake. For although the movement had been a voluntary one it was not without its serious consequences on society and religion. The learning of the language was a means to an end: the ability to communicate on the social and religious levels. However, it was the religious aspect of the problem that was of great moment and so it more readily attracted attention. The danger that the text of the Qur'an might be corrupted through ignorance of Arabic on the part of the non-Arab converts was real and potent. The chaotic linguistic situation merited official intervention.
The initiative of Ziyād (45-53/665-672) in suggesting the adoption of a more systematic approach to the problem of learning the language was a response to a hard felt need.\textsuperscript{1}

The problem of the mawālī was accentuated by that of the illiterate Arabs who in increasing numbers had to learn to read their sacred Book. The deficiency of orthography, lack of diacritical and vowel points were making the task harder for everybody. The early and much disputed attempt of Abū-‘l-Aswad ad-Du‘alī (d.67/686-7) to facilitate this task by indicating the vowel points of the Qur‘ān by means of dots,\textsuperscript{2} or by laying the foundations of grammar proper,\textsuperscript{3} or by achieving both ends together,\textsuperscript{4} should be viewed within the context and in the light of the conditions prevailing at the time.

The painstaking attempts to learn the language by the early mawālī who had first come in contact with the Arabs at the age when already adult resulted in widespread corruption of the language. But the succeeding generations of mawālī who were born within the migr stood a better chance of learning the language since they were nurtured in an Arabic atmosphere. The need had already been felt for systematic efforts to help them achieve mastery of language.

Their amusing ways of handling the language which provoked laughter and sometimes derision on the part of the ordinary

\textsuperscript{1.} cf. Ibn-an-Nadīm, Fihrist, 60; Nuzha, 3-4; the drawn out debate over the role of ‘Alī is inconclusive.

\textsuperscript{2.} Fihrist, ibid.; Suyūṭī, Dughyā, 274; Luzhir, ii, 246-7; cf. Pellat, 128-135.

\textsuperscript{3.} Fihrist, 61; Yāq., Irshād, v, 263; Nuzha, 5; ar-Rāzī, Zīnā, i, 73.

\textsuperscript{4.} Irshād, vi, 100, vii, 200; Haywood, Arabic Lexicography, 11-16.
Arabs were taken more seriously by others.1 Abū-'l-Aswad is again mentioned in connection with the earliest systematic venture to teach the language.2 His most illustrious disciples 'Ambasa ibn-Wa’dān and Naymūn al-Aqrān were Persians.3 To their efforts and those of their fellow learners Naṣr ibn-‘Āṣim (d. 89/708) and Yaḥyā ibn-Ya’mar (d.129/747)4 is due the early foundations of grammatical science. The mawālī brought their cultural heritage and systematic methodical discipline to bear on this consuming activity. Grammar, as distinct from other literary pursuits, was increasingly subjected to rigid rules and was already emerging as a systematic branch of science under the second generation of philologists. Under ‘Abdallah ibn-Abī-Iṣḥāq al-Ḥaḍramī (d. 117/735), ‘Īsā ibn-‘Umar ath-Thaqafī (d.149/766), both mawālī, and Abū-‘Amr ibn-al-‘Aṣī (d.154/771) the science was put on its feet. Al-Ḥaḍramī employed analogy extensively5 in an attempt to regularize the rules and extend the scope of their application and thereby bring the system under control. He is also credited with going beyond that to investigate the philosophy of grammar (‘ilal an-naḥw).6 ‘Īsā ibn-‘Umar was among the earliest scholars who committed their copious knowledge to writing. He is said to have written over 70 monographs the most important

1. cf. Fihrist, 60.
3. Fihrist, 62.
5. Sirāfī, Akhbar an-Nahwiyīn al-Baṣriyyīn, 25; Nuzha, 10.
6. Nuzha, 11; Bughya, 282.
among which were al-Jāmi', an exhaustive study of grammar, and al-Mukmil (or Ikmal) its abridgement.¹

These early scholars devoted their energies wholly to the study of the Qur'ān and the Arabic language and were eventually recognized as authorities by the Arabs who took their language for granted. The fact that such a distinguished and eloquent orator as al-Ḥajjāj should find it necessary to ask Yaḥyā ibn-Ya‘mar about the correctness of his utterances² indicates both the influence of these scholars and the widespread tendency of settled Arabs to lose their chasteness of speech, faṣāha. The town dwellers found themselves under constant pressure to shed a large part of the cumbersome vocabulary of the desert and adapt their language to the requirements of their urban environment. The tendency to preserve the purity of language by using quaint expressions and unfamiliar words, which in many cases culminated in invention and fabrication,³ soon became a sign of snobbishness and was eventually abandoned. The tedious practice was left to pedants like Yaḥyā ibn-Ya‘mar and ‘Īsā ibn-‘Umar whose contrived practices often became a source of amusement and embarrassment.

The movement was making inroads in another direction. Some of the early scholars set the pace for subjecting the art of poetry, which had been the Arabs' most highly esteemed

². Irshād, vii, 296.
intellectual activity to systematic disciplines. The vehement lampoons of al-Farazdaq (d. 110/728) against 'Anbasa and Abdallah ibn-al-Hadraram in which he attacked them on account of their status as mawali, were a natural reaction against their interference in an art which the Arabs thought themselves the only people fit to judge.

3. Literary studies:

The cultural movement which had started with the tentative and sporadic attempts of the early pioneers to study the Qur'an and the Arabic language was in full swing long before the close of the first century of Islam. While the major Arab poets were entertaining their audiences in al-Mirbad by reciting their compositions or vying with each other in praising their tribes and denouncing their adversaries and echoing thereby the rivalries and antagonisms between their respective parties, the famous mosque of Basra was steadily becoming the centre of learning and scholarship. The early modest circles of the Companions such as that of 'Imran ibn-Husayn multiplied and expanded. The widening scope of knowledge was increasingly forcing specialization on scholars, and by the time of al-Hasan al-Basri (d. 110/728) the philologists (aghab al-'Arabiyya) became a distinct group and had their own circles besides those of the traditionists, reciters, qussas and others. Furthermore

1. cf. Sirafi, 24; Nuzha, 7; Irshad, vi, 92; Bughya, 368.
2. Nuzha, 11; Bughya, 282; Chapter V, pp. 296-297 below.
4. cf. Irshad, iv, 135.
specialization in the study of the various literary genres had already been under way despite the encyclopaedic nature of learning at this formative stage. Certain social and cultural factors forced the pace of literary scholarship in many important respects.

This absorbing interest in language and poetry - its embodiment - was brought about by a combination of two important trends. The fervent desire of the Arab tribes to revive their past glories and create a more favourable image of themselves in relation to their political rivals, led to the extensive exploitation of poetry, pre-Islamic or otherwise, as a means of propaganda, a course of action which eventually culminated in the collection of pre-Islamic poetry, as we shall see presently.¹ At the same time the students of the Qur'ān and the philologists in their endeavours to explain the words and usages of the sacred Book and to deduce the grammatical rules had to draw on almost the same source for testimonial evidence (shawāhid). The meticulous care and reverence with which the early scholars treated their pre-Islamic material was due in part to the high regard in which the Arab tribes held their poetic heritage since it reflected their treasured history and was still of immediate relevance to their lives early in the Umayyad era. On the other hand, the fact that poetry was used, in these early learned circles, on the whole as a linguistic tool, a means to an end, left its indelible mark on the study and

¹ cf. Chs. II, VI and VII below.
appreciation of poetry itself for a long time.

The outstanding figure in the sphere of literary studies was Abū-'Amr ibn-al-'Alā', the contemporary of Ibn-al-Ḥāḍramī. Under him literary scholarship reached a high peak. In addition to his grammatical bent he excelled in Qur'anic and poetic studies. His field notes and written collections of poetry and language were said to "fill a house up to the ceiling" but, seized by a pious fit, he burned them all. He upheld the superiority of ancient poetry above all contemporary production and was so consistent in his stand that, according to al-Āṣma‘ī, for the full duration of ten years, presumably the period in which al-Āṣma‘ī came in contact with him, he never gave any Islamic verse as evidence. But his insight into the significance of poetry, both pre-Islamic and Islamic and his appreciation of it paved the way for the more systematic study of poetry in the ‘Abbasid period.

Social change was fashioning the cultural scene in another significant manner. The steady urbanization of the Arabs in the miṣr and their continual contact with non-Arabs tended, as already indicated, to strain and weaken their linguistic faculties and it eventually robbed most of them of their spontaneous handling of the language in comparison with their Bedouin counterparts. The scholars noticed the change

2. *Irshād*, *ibid.*, 216; *Bayḥa*, 267; *Bayān*, 1, 256.
3. *Bayān*, 1, 256.
very early and were quick to devise appropriate means by which their researches in language were safeguarded against infiltration by debased language. All town dwellers and Bedouins close to them were excluded as being heavily infested with foreign influence.\textsuperscript{1} The search for authentic and genuine language was thus carried into the depths of the desert where the purity of language was thought to be preserved. The Bedouins, however, soon discovered that their manners of speech were in great demand and many of them invaded the \textit{migr} to provide the philologists with what they were after. \textit{Al-Mirbad} became a lucrative market for Bedouin verbiage and quaint expressions which the pedantic scholars hunted with consuming eagerness.

By the end of the Umayyad period when most of the tribal conflicts were steadily losing their heat and the poets who echoed them were a dying species, the interest in the old poetry and language remained alive in the hearts of philologists who painstakingly recorded and studied them. The poets who previously used to be the source of linguistic material upon which philologists drew, eventually came within the orbit of the latter, and looked to them for guidance and counsel. The scholastic schools which were beginning to utilize the vital knowledge derived from Greek, Persian and Indian sources, in addition to the major shift in the social and cultural scale in favour of the \textit{mawāli} element, all precipitated a significant change in the cultural climate of Baṣra.

\textsuperscript{1} cf. \textit{Sirāfī}, 90; Cf. Ch. VI below.
CHAPTER II

THE PLACE OF POETRY IN BASRĪ SOCIETY

1. The uniqueness of Basrī poetry:

A comparative look into the poetic records of the various Islamic amṣār reveals that the poetry of Baṣra is, on the whole, not merely different, but in certain respects, also unique. Although it is true that the literary history of any one miṣr is unique in the sense that it is a result of the interplay of distinct social, economic, political and other factors which the respective region experienced, it is more so in the case of Baṣra than in any other case. This uniqueness does not stop at the kind of poetry produced, but is reflected in the role that this poetry played in Baṣrī life. A bird's-eye view of the contemporary literary situation in the other amṣār may help to put that of Baṣra in its right perspective.

The social and political conditions of Hijāz fostered the development of love poetry. Poets, whether in towns or the countryside, excelled in perfecting their art in two distinct genres. The emergence of a rich and leisurely class of Qurashī youths in towns, deprived of political ambitions and deliberately encouraged by Umayyads to indulge in activities other than politics, helped to produce what is termed 'realistic' erotic poetry. The relative poverty of the countryside worked upon by the complex social and

1. cf. Ṭahā Ḥusayn, Ḥadīth al-Arbi‘a', II. ; Nicholson, Literary History, 236-238.
moral consequences of Islam and heightened by the earnest drive of Bedouins to join the conquering armies, gave rise to a 'romantic' (‘udhri) school of amatory poetry. Both groups contributed to the evolution of that species of poetry in which the individuality of the poet as well as the dominant mood, whether pleasure-seeking in towns or intense deprivation elsewhere, were very clearly marked. On the other hand, this preoccupation with love and pleasure restricted the scope of poetry and tended, in effect, to limit its impact on society as a whole.

In Kūfa, the sister town of Baṣra, the apparent preponderance of Southern Yemenī tribes over the northern tribes – conventionally known as Ṣīzarīs – helped to reduce tribal friction but not political strife and the kind of poetry this situation entailed merited a place of especial distinction on account of its being, by and large, the vehicle of the political beliefs of the different religious parties, especially the Shi'īs and the Khārijīs.

The third haven of poetry, Syria, where the Umayyad court was stationed, echoed, on the whole, the voices of the other regions; it virtually lacked an indigenous voice of its own.²

It is, however, in Baṣra that we find the kinds of poetry that reflect in a more comprehensive manner the various phases of social development and are potent enough to leave

1. cf. Ch.I, 27 above.
their indelible marks on the other regions as well. In fact, the intimate relationship between poetry and the daily life of Baṣra had been such that the reports about it in literary chronicles sometimes gave the impression that poetry had been the sole preoccupation of the Baṣrīs. This exaggerated view, extreme as it is, does, however, reflect the seriousness of the role that poetry played in Baṣrī life. On balance, poetry when viewed against the intellectual background where other groups such as quṣṣāṣ (story-tellers) and waَ†āz (preachers) had also been competing for people's attention, was a potent force indeed and impinged on Baṣrī life to a degree no other miṣr experienced.

In order to appreciate fully the significance of this poetic activity and the extent to which it was held in regard by the various groups it is important to sketch in broad outline the major factors underlying its elevated position in Baṣra.

2. Nizārī preponderance:

The special position of Baṣra as the home of the predominantly Nizārī tribes, especially those of the eastern flank and in particular the Tamīm, goes a long way to explain a number of trends peculiar to the Baṣrī scene. The preponderance of Tamīm in particular had far-reaching effects on both the social and literary planes. Foremost among these was the continuation, with a brief interruption immediately following the rise of Islam, of the pre-Islamic tradition of Arabic poetry. The tribe was renowned for the
richness of its literary heritage and was recognized as the custodian of Arabic poetry in Islam. Its members not only preserved a good deal of ancient poetry which was then transmitted verbally, but they also produced the best poets of Islam. Abū-'Ubayda, the philologist and critic is reported to have said, "The poets in the pre-Islamic era appeared mainly among Qays, but none in Islam equals the share of Tamīm with respect to poetry". As a matter of fact the various clans of the tribe represented in various ways the true tradition of the Bedouin Arabs in social as well as in literary matters, hence the insistence on preserving the Jāhili mode of poetic composition which set Baṣra apart in relation to the other regions. The proximity of the region to the Arabian desert reinforced this tendency, but the other modifying factors which progressively leavened the general pattern of its life exerted their influence in different ways and varying degrees on the production of poets. The agony of transition is evident in their attitudes and productions. What at times looked conflicting and irreconcilable in their works was perhaps a true representation of their times, which were often out of joint. The multitudinous problems attending the slow and often painful transformation of the Bedouins into a mature urban community coupled with the further complications of political conflicts - internal and external - decisively affected the course and

1. cf. Ch. VI, p.305 for the case of al-Farazdaq.
2. Agh., xix, 6; Yaq., Irshād, vii, 258.
nature of poetry evoked under the prevailing circumstances. The endemic tribal conflicts and the hordes of petty problems resulting from the sheer unruliness of Bedouins left their stamp on much of the poetry of the time. Poetry, more than any other medium, increasingly became the vehicle for expressing the dominant moods and attitudes.

The judicious verdict of Muḥammad ibn-Sallām regarding Arabic poetry holds good in the case of Baṣra. He said, "Poetry had been the Register of Arabs ... but with the emergence of Islam they were distracted from it by fighting against Persians and Byzantines and [the result was that] poetry and its transmission were neglected. With the conquests and their settlement in the ḍaḥir, the Arabs revived [their interest in] transmission of poetry, but to their loss they could not find any written document and the discovery came at a time when a good number of Arabs had died or had been killed in battle ..." ¹ The dearth of poetry in the early years of Islam is evident. Even the poets who had been renowned for their excellence in the pre-Islamic period and then migrated to Baṣra were unable to hold their own and were relegated to a decisively inferior position when they composed poetry in Islam. Celebrated poets like an-Namir ibn-Tawlab,² al-Mukhabbal as-Sa‘dī,³ ‘Amr ibn-al-Aḥtam⁴ and a few others were often remembered

1. ² ¹ Tabagāt, 22-3.
3. Ibid., xii, 40-45.
4. cf. Mub., Kāmil, ii, 68; Ibn-Qut., Sh., ii, 614-615; Bayān, i, 53-54, 276; Mufaddaliyyat, 125, 409.
only for their pre-Islamic achievements. The emergence of Islam and the gradual decline of the society they had known had the natural effect of blunting their poetic edge.¹ The new conditions, whether in the bādiya or the town, demanded and in effect produced a new order of poets as varied as the range of situations that the tumultuous life of the migrants at large could embrace.

3. Umayyads and poetry:

As the initial shock which Islam produced on Arab life subsided, and it became clear that the old system could - with minor modifications - be adapted to suit the new conditions, a kind of retrenchment set in. The concentrated energies of Arab tribes which had been effectively harnessed to establishing the supremacy of Islam within and without Arabia were eventually absorbed in the struggle to settle the problem of succession after the assassination of 'Uthman. The ascendancy of the Umayyads with their avowed relish of Arab traditions set the stage for far-reaching changes in the attitude and approach of both subjects and rulers to the matter of poetry. It is not our concern here to prove or refute the assumption that the Umayyads ignored Islam in their dealings; but this much is certain: they encouraged in various ways the revival of traditional Arab culture with poetry at the top of their list. It might well be that the Umayyads in this respect were the symptoms of a general trend

¹ For the general effect of Islam on poetry cf. Ibn-Qut., Sh., 1, 265; Mar., Muwash., 62.
rather than its cause, that they were reactors rather than initiators. On the question of poetry they undoubtedly reversed the puritanic approach of their predecessors. 'Umar ibn-al-Khaṭṭāb is reported to have said, "Poetry had been the lore of a people who had no other more authoritative source", implying that the Qur'ān replaced it in Islam, and he went further to stamp out all forms of poetry reminiscent of the Jahiliyya, at times by imprisoning poets who infringed the ban, and at others by reducing their pensions. 'Uthman followed his example and imprisoned a Tamīmī brigand who lampooned the mother of his adversaries. 'Alī, although he was claimed to be a poet himself, was averse to the practice of poetry and is said to have advised the father of al-Farazdaq, who boasted of his son's poetic genius, to teach him the Qur'ān instead. Ibn-'Abbās, who was the deputy of 'Alī in Başra threatened Ibn-Faswa, imprisoned him for a day and then banished him from Başra. It is, perhaps, this aversion to poetry on the part of those early rulers that accounts partly for the almost complete absence of any

1. Ibn-Sall., Tabaqāt, 22.
2. For the imprisonment of Ḥuṭay'a, cf. Ibn-Qut., Sh., i, 287.
3. For the case of al-Aghlab al-‘ijlī, whose pension was diminished by 500 dirhams, cf. Agh., xviii, 165.
5. Agh., xix, 6.
6. Ibid., xix, 144; cf. Ch. V, p.248 below.
serious poetry extolling their merits or celebrating their deeds whereas it was the usual practice of poets to praise leaders and princes before and shortly after them. On the other hand, the Umayyad attitude as exemplified by Mu'awiya ibn-Abî-Sufyān amounted almost to a complete reversal of policy. On examining the various branches of knowledge in which the young 'Ubaydallāh ibn-Ziyād excelled, he found him lacking in the knowledge of poetry. On being told by the young man that he "hated to bring together in his breast the words of God with those of Satan" and implying that he disdained wasting his time on this inferior knowledge, while the loftier knowledge of the Qur'ān demanded his full attention, the caliph retorted sharply that the nobility of poetry was beyond question and sent him back to his father Ziyād in Baṣra with a letter demanding that he should teach his son poetry, which he did.1 ‘Abd-al-Malik was more forthright in encouraging poetry when he publicly degraded a dignitary in Kūfa and conferred his status upon an insignificant fellow-tribesman because the latter surpassed the former in his knowledge of the poetry of their tribal bard, Dhū-'l-Iṣba' al-'Adwānī. Such a spectacle was made of him that "the people henceforth cultivated a burning desire for literature".2 Al-Ḥajjāj in his public speeches underlined this tendency by quoting Jahili poetry far oftener

1. Suyūṭī, Muẓhir, ii, 197; cf. ‘Umda, i, 29.
than Qur'ān. Thus the general trend had been in favour of promoting the learning and production of poetry and the excesses of poets were tolerated as long as they refrained from criticising the regime itself.

4. Poetry and tribes:

The Umayyads affected the literary scene in another direction. Their policy of exploiting tribal conflicts to the advantage of the dynasty intensified the discord between the various groups and contributed to the production of different species of poetry aimed mainly at elevating the position of the group to which the poet belonged. The consequence of this policy in the domain of poetry was the unprecedented flourishing of satire (hijā'), panegyric (madḥ) and boasting (fakhr). These genres were the stock-in-trade of most poets before Islam, but never before had they been cultivated in such profusion as in the Umayyad period and more especially in the region of Baṣra. The explanation of this phenomenon is not hard to find. Poetry came increasingly to be recognized as the most effective organ of political propaganda. The tribes which at times fought against each other to secure a place for themselves in the political arena found it useful to further their claims by inciting their poets to extol their glories and undermine their adversaries' position through lampooning. The result was that poetry became, more than at any time before or since, so closely enmeshed in the daily run of

1. This point is discussed in detail in Chapter III below.
Bagrī life, that at times, as noted earlier, it appeared to be the major activity. An index of the importance of poetry as a means of inflating the tribal image, was the practice of many tribes who had found their records meagre to forge laudatory poetry and attribute it to their pre-Islamic poets. Even the strong personal tone exhibited in many satirical compositions at the time was a corollary of the dominant currents of tribal rivalries. But despite this position a measure of caution should be exercised in dealing with the relationship of much of this poetry to the realities of life. For the fortunes of poetry oscillated - in the same manner as the fortunes of tribes - between two extremes. It has been noted earlier that the strength and weakness of tribal feeling reflected in a sense the strength and weakness of state control. When central control weakened or broke down tribal bickerings sometimes attained the proportions of physical warfare and poets, as the spokesmen of their respective parties, reflected in their poetry the reverberations of clashes. In times of peace, when the government imposed its will and restrained unruliness, the tribes, as parties, submitted to law and order, and poets usually settled down to the mundane business of either competing with each other to celebrate past tribal achievements, thus keeping alive in people's minds the major issues of tribal strife, or perpetuating that strife on a smaller scale which could sometimes be reduced to the utmost personal level possible as in the case of the classical

1. Ibn-Sall., op.cit., 39-40.
scolding-match between Jarīr and al-Farazdaq who were both Tamīmīs, but belonged to different clans. Their affair is a case in point illustrating in the domain of poetry the swing of the pendulum between the two extremes of the tragically serious and the comically trivial in tribal activities when practised under centralized authority. For although the feud between the two great poets assumed in some stages the proportions of an extremely personal vendetta, where obscenities were hurled and the women of either clan calumined, the feud in essence reflected a deeper and a wider conception of clannish rivalry. Indeed the personal feuds between most other poets at the time were part and parcel of the general feuds between clans and only the prevailing circumstances determined the degree of involvement where the personal element merges with the communal. The old conception of the organic unity of the clan, although under continuous pressure in the urban settlement, died hard and persisted in the minds of the Arabs long after the actual tribes themselves had been absorbed in the urban structure of society. This conception does not draw a clear line between the individual and the group to which he belongs. Therefore to lampoon an individual can be viewed as another way of lampooning the group to which he belonged. On hearing the verse:

Had it not been for Jarīr Bajīla would certainly have perished, how excellent is the youth, and how debased the tribe[1],

1. Jarīr ibn-'Abdallāh al-Bajalī, the Companion of Muḥammad.
2. The serial number between brackets at the end of translations refers to their Arabic versions in the appendix, p. 347 below.
al-Hasan al-Baṣrī asked his audience whether the verse was meant to be praise or satire, and on being told that the poet praised the man and lampooned his people, he gave the reply, "No one is praised when his people are lampooned." This explains the great pains taken by the two poets and all the other tribal poets, even in their most personal encounters to enumerate and extol the merits of their respective clans and to dwell at great length on recording their past glories as we shall see presently.

5. The poet between tribe and state:

The intimate relationship of this poetry with Baṣrī life sometimes gave rise to speculations about the seriousness of its role. Was it meant to entertain the leisurely people of Baṣra and break the monotony of their existence as has been suggested by some scholars? Or was it on the other hand of any practical import as far as the realities of life were concerned? This in turn poses the general question of the relationship of the poet to his community. Thus in order to assess the real significance of poetry in the Baṣrī community it is essential to take stock of the poet himself and trace his fortunes in the community for which he produces his poetry. The position of the poet in society reflects very intimately the position of poetry in that society. Since the Baṣrī poet represents just another link in the evolutionary chain of Arabic poetry it is not amiss

2. cf. Shawqi Dayf, At-Ta'jawwur wa-'t-Tajdīd, 88, 120ff, 200ff.
to recall here the image and status of the pre-Islamic poet to whom the Başrî poet was in a sense a continuation. Abû-'Amr ibn-al-'Alâ is reported to have said, "The poets had been placed by pre-Islamic Arabs in the status of prophets, but when they mixed with settled communities and used poetry as a means of gaining livelihood they declined in rank. When Islam came and the Qur'ān reviled poetry and regarded it as deceit they slipped a step down. Then they resorted to flattery and submissiveness suffering thereby a further reduction in stature and people tended to take them lightly".\(^1\) Jaḥîẓ corroborates the view of Abû-'Amr by suggesting that the poet had been initially of a higher standing among early Arabs than the orator, but when the poets increased in number and production the orator was advanced in rank over the poet.\(^2\) This decline in the poet's position as a spokesman of his tribe which was noticed by scholars as having started during the latter part of the Jahiliyya would be expected to accelerate in Islam as the words of Abû-'Amr suggested. With Islam the autonomy of the tribe gradually gave way to the hegemony of the state which demanded, at least in the theory, the loyalty and obedience of all Arabs as citizens and not as tribesmen and throughout the entire period of the Umayyad and part of the 'Abbasid reigns the tribal structure was actively trimmed and eroded to produce a more homogeneous urban community. Tribalism, even in Başra which was especially noted for its unruliness, increasingly became confined in the

1. Rāzī, Kitāb az-Zīna, i, 95.
2. Bayān, iii, 272.
rigid frame imposed by Islam and maintained by the caliphate to which, with very few exceptions, Arabs being Muslims, paid allegiance. At times, and as a consequence of Umayyad policy, tribalism played its role as part of the political machinery, but in all circumstances the cardinal fact of belonging to the larger community was never in question. The strife, even at its hottest, was mainly aimed at securing a greater share of power or prestige with the reigning caliph or his governors. This situation created a dilemma for a good number of poets who found themselves torn between their loyalties to tribes and their fear of administrators bent on reducing all vestiges of tribal independence. In the end the power of the state proved superior and the poets succumbed in varying degrees to the persuasion or coercion of the ruler. While some of them devoted themselves wholly to the service of the emir and almost attained in his court the status of a poet laureate as in the case of Yazīd ibn-Mufarrigh with 'Abbād ibn-Ziyād, some, as in the case of Jarīr with al-Ḥajjāj combined both the position of a defender of tribal honour and that of a court poet. Furthermore poets with strong tribal feelings like al-Parazdaq who felt themselves called upon to defend their tribes at all costs, could ignore the domineering power of the state only at their own peril.¹

Nonetheless it is possible to discern a correspondence between the attitude of poets in general towards the state and the general pattern of development underlying the gradual submission of Bedouins to the authority of the state. A

¹. This point is elaborated in Chapter IV below.
feeling of independence and sometimes of open defiance is
discerned in some poets in the early period of the Umayyad
era. The young poet al-Farazdaq addressed to Mu'awiya a
scathing poem\(^1\) in which he scolded the caliph in brave and
blunt terms for withholding the reward which he had given
to the Tamīmī chief al-Ḥutāt al-Muṣāshi‘ī who died before
receiving it. He addressed the caliph by his first name
and after boasting of his superior origin indicated to him
that had that act of injustice been committed in pre-Islamic
times Mu'awiya would have regretted it. Mu'awiya gave in
reluctantly and despatched the money to the heirs of the
deceased.\(^2\) His boasting of his noble lineage in the
presence of Sulaymān ibn-‘Abd-al-Malik which amounted to
contempt infuriated the caliph who sent him away without any
reward. The poet hit back at the caliph saying:-

We have come to you neither because we felt in any
need of you, nor on account of deficiency in
Muṣāshi‘ī.\(^2\)\(^3\)

Another Tamīmī poet, Abū-Ḥuzāba who was urged by his
people to seek the favours of the caliph Yazīd I discovered
to his horror the ignominy a poet had to suffer before he was
received in audience and returned in anger before seeing the
caliph fuming:-

By the very name of God I shall never come to Yazīd even
though his hands contain all that lie between East
and West,

For Yazīd, may God reverse his state, is inclined to
evil, persistent in sin.\(^3\)^4

1. Far., i, 45.
2. cf. Ṭab., ii, 97; Agh., xix, 37; Nag., 609; Ibn-Sall.,
op.cit., 251; cf. E.I\(^2\), "Farazdak" by Blachère.
3. 'Iqd, ii, 63-4.
But such intransigence was allowed only as long as it did not arouse public feelings. Vigilant governors like Ziyād, ṭuṣʻab and al-Ḥajjāj did not hesitate - as we shall see later - to imprison and sometimes to execute unruly poets.

The state came to play a more positive role in helping to weaken the dependence of the poet on his tribal group for gaining his bread by presenting a more lucrative alternative. The favours available to those who attached themselves to an emir and the prospect of acquiring wealth and fame influenced the course of poetry in many respects. The Umayyads as a matter of policy were exceptionally generous with poets who were prepared to exalt their merits. They were conscious of the hostility of a large number of people in Iraq and Ḥijāz to their rule and so they resorted to all forms of persuasion and intimidation to enlist support. The poets were the undisputed organs of propaganda and the discovery of a good poet who would serve their cause best was heartily welcomed. The courts of caliphs as well as those of their governors in the provinces provided tremendous opportunities for the resourceful versifier. The case of Jarīr is indicative of the importance they attached to the activities of poets. It is reported that Ayyūb ibn-al-Ḥakam, the deputy of al-Ḥajjāj in Baṣra, was so impressed by the poetic talent of Jarīr that he wrote to al-Ḥajjāj about him and described him as being 'a devil among devils', to which al-Ḥajjāj responded by demanding his immediate presence.1 Jarīr eventually became his personal poet, but al-Ḥajjāj felt it

necessary that Jarīr should also be presented before the caliph. Although ‘Abd-al-Malik at first snubbed the poet on account of his laudatory poetry on al-Ḥajjāj and even addressed him as the 'poet of al-Ḥajjāj', he eventually listened to him and was so moved by what he had to say as to give him a hundred camels.¹ The contribution of such poets to the success of Umayyad policy in Iraq and elsewhere was enormous despite the rebellion or antagonism they sometimes displayed on certain occasions.² Other poets who were not usually inclined to tie themselves to a particular court or to propagate a consistent line of policy such as al-Farazdaq felt, more often than not, the need for the money and offered their services to the highest bidder.

The career of this latter category was facilitated by yet another development. The propaganda and counter-propaganda which Umayyad policy had engendered furnished a fertile soil for the extensive cultivation of satire and panegyric not only on the tribal level as has been indicated earlier but also on the other political and personal levels. The effects of panegyric and satire came increasingly to be seen in a new light since tribes, parties or ambitious individuals could reap the fruits in very tangible forms. Poets could build up the image of an aspirant emir who was prepared to pay generously and many of these emirs went out

¹ Ibid., vii, 66-7; Ibn-Sall., op.cit., 357; Jaḥiẓ, Tāj, 132-4. Ḥajjāj also sent al-‘Ajjāj and his son Ru’ba to al-Walīd ibn-‘Abd-al-Malik (Agh., xx1, 88), while ‘Abd-al-Malik invited Dhū-‘r-Rumma to his court (Muwash., 239).
² cf. Ch.IV below.
of their way to attract the prominent poets of their time, not only to satisfy a personal whim but because a good reputation and a bright image could pay dividends in the ruling circles, who themselves employed the same device to produce a similar effect on the minds of their subjects. A simple utilitarian view of this complex process is bluntly stated by the dignitary 'Abd-ar-Raḥmān ibn-al-Ḥakam who is reported to have told al-Farazdaq: "Spare me, O Ḫūṣṭān, your poetry, the conclusion of which does not come before its beginning is forgotten; compose on me just two memorable verses and I will give you a reward that none before me has given you". The next morning the poet composed the two verses and earned 10,000 dirhams in return.¹ This concern for a good reputation and the fervent desire to free one's good name from reproach or unjust imputation sometimes led to excesses reminiscent of extreme Ḥāshī practices, and as we shall see later,² the state had, on occasions, to intervene to curb the excesses which were obviously against the spirit of Islam.

Satire was likewise employed by those in power to destroy the reputation of their opponents. The classical example is that of al-Ḥaḍāḥ and al-Muḥallab ibn-Abī-Ṣufra when the former instigated al-Farazdaq to lampoon the latter and his family.³ The same poet, however, was soon persuaded

1. 'Iqd, i, 242; Ḫumād, ii, 128.
2. cf. Ch. V below.
3. cf. Hell,"al-Farazdaq's Lieder," ZDMG, lx, 589-624; lxi, 1-48. Similar examples are furnished by Yazīd I when he incited al-Akḥṭal to lampoon the Anṣār (Ibn-Sall., op.cit., 397-8) and Yazīd II when he ordered poets to lampoon Yazīd the Muḥallabī (ibid., 542-3).
by the Muhallabīs to mend his ways and praise them. The practice of such poets - by no means all - who had no qualms about rendering their services to both sides and who did not hesitate to lampoon the individual they had just praised, frightened people and gave such poets enormous powers which they exploited to the full. Bashshār ibn-Burd who practised the lampoon extensively and ultimately suffered death for it was explicit about his motivation when he said, "I have found that scathing satire is more effective in elevating the fortunes of the poet than excellent panegyric; whatever poet desires to receive honour in the era of base men through composing eulogies let him be prepared for poverty; otherwise let him indulge in composing satire to frighten people thus forcing them to give liberally."  

This fear was no doubt genuine as is exemplified by the vast number of anecdotes involving tribes as well as individuals. A number of tribal groups had to disown some of their members in order to avert satire. Thus when al-‘Abbās of Kinda exchanged satires with Jarīr his tribe did not hesitate to hurry to Jarīr, disown al-‘Abbās, expose his defects and implore Jarīr to restrict his invective to the recalcitrant poet and refrain from implicating them.  

Another poet of ‘Abd-al-Qays who had dared to lampoon the same poet is said to have been shackled by his tribal chief and sent to Jarīr who was asked to pass whatever judgement

1. Jarīr is credited with never having satirized anyone he had praised or vice versa (Nag., 1049).
2. Agh., iii, 53.
he saw fit on him.¹ In a similar manner the Banū-Ḥaram brought one of their poets who had attacked al-Farazdaq and asked his pardon. Al-Farazdaq told them:

Whoever is afraid of the injurious effects of my poetry, [let him know that] the Banū-Ḥaram have certainly become secure against satire, They have led their foolish [one to me] and were apprehensive of necklaces [of satirical poetry that fit round one's neck] like the rings of doves.[²]

The mother of Nāfi⁴, a poet of Banū-Ja'far who had lampooned al-Farazdaq, had no alternative but to throw herself on the tomb of Ḥālib, the father of al-Farazdaq in an appeal for the mercy of the latter.³ The Başrīs' dread of al-Farazdaq's satire was remarkably manifest when most of them refused to give any kind of help to an-Nawār when she decided to revoke the marriage imposed on her by the poet without her consent by raising the case to Ibn-az-Zubayr in Medina. Not only did they refuse to give her a mount to travel on, but even the witnesses who knew she was right in her claim refused to come forward with their testimony.⁴ This fear, however, was not confined to Başra but extended to Medina when the Anṣār found themselves in the awkward position of having to send their chiefs in a delegation to implore al-Farazdaq, who had been in the town at the time, not to satirize them on account of an encounter he had had with an Anṣārī youth who challenged his poetic status.⁵

---

². *Umda*, 1, 66.
³. *Naq.*, 525; *Far.*, 1, 367.
⁴. *Agh.*, xix, 7.
On the other hand, the fear induced by poets varied in degree according to the fame and prestige at stake. This is borne out by the anecdote of the humble Nabataean who met al-Farazdaq and subjected him to the following interrogation:

- Are you al-Farazdaq?
  - Yes.
- Are you the one whose tongue is dreaded by people?
  - Yes
- Are you the one whose lampoon when uttered will kill this horse of mine?
  - No
- Will it kill my son?
  - No
- Will it kill me?

On receiving the poet’s negative reply to the last question he started to abuse the poet in a most abominable fashion\(^1\) to which the poet made no reply. Jarīr underlined the same paradox when he was told by his son, "You have never lampooned any group without disgracing them except Taym", to which he replied, "I have found neither an edifice to undermine nor a glory to debase".\(^2\) The same Jarīr, when assaulted by an insignificant poet called al-Bardakht - a Persian word meaning unemployed - retorted with a pun which can be translated as, "By God I shall not have him employed at my expense", and made his peace with him.\(^3\) This indicates that the same

---

1. 'Iqd, iv, 136; Agh., xix, 37.
2. Ibn-Sall., op. cit., 372.
3. 'Umda, i, 203.
process can sometimes operate in reverse. A famous poet could even by satire bring to light and sometimes to fame an insignificant individual or group. Al-Farazdaq made this clear when he said, in the course of an invective against Bahila:

How often have I elevated the name of a base man, causing him to receive nourishment in my name, who otherwise would be unable to succeed.[5]¹

Many poets used to incite Jarīr to lampoon them with a view to receiving public attention.² Bashshār in his youth had made such an attempt but Jarīr spurned him and the poet later on recalled the event saying, "Had he responded by satirizing me I would have been the best of poets."³ Al-La‘īn al-Mingarī was driving at the same result when he intervened between Jarīr and al-Ba‘īth but they ignored him.⁴

But the case is totally different with those whose prestige exposed them to the invective of covetous poets. Al-Muhallab ibn-Abī-Ṣufra had to cancel the conscription order of Jarīr on the intercession of al-Farazdaq and when people complained that this would open the way for all sorts of corrupt practices al-Muhallab had nothing to say but, "I have only purchased my honour from him i.e. al-Farazdaq".⁵

The same al-Muhallab when asked to pass a literary judgement on Jarīr and al-Farazdaq is reported to have said, "Would you expose me to be torn to pieces by these two dogs? I will

2. Ibn-Sall. 380.
4. Ibn-Sall., 343.
5. Agh., xix, 28.
not decide between them but I shall point out to you those
who care nothing for either of them. Go to the Azārīqa...\(^1\)

The Umayyads exploited poetry to further their policy in
another direction. They were aware of the effectiveness of
the dictum "divide and rule" and used poets to spread dissension
and distract attention by keeping the various groups busy in
their petty strife, especially in times of peace and stability.
‘Ubaydallāh ibn-Ziyād deliberately instigated a protracted
poetic feud between Ḥāritha ibn-Badr of Tamīm and Anas ibn-
Zunaym of Layth, two of his closest Basrī courtiers.\(^2\) Bishr
ibn-Harwān was most notorious for fanning the flames of
hostility between poets, which inevitably involved their
tribes. He started the quarrel between Jarīr and Surāqa
of Bāriq when he forced the latter to satirize the former
who had been at Dāhna’, and he sent the verses to him for a
reply,\(^3\) which shows the contrived nature of the encounter.
The same Bishr was instrumental in precipitating the classical
duel between Jarīr and al-Akhtāl\(^4\) which brought in its wake
great repercussions by polarizing, on the poetical plane, the
political and tribal feuds which raged between Qays and Tamīm
on the one hand and between Qays and Taghlib on the other. It
was the practice of some caliphs and their emirs – notably
Sulaymān ibn-‘Abd-al-Malik\(^5\) and Bishr ibn-Harwān\(^6\) – to invite

---

1. Ibid., vii, 55.
2. Ibid., xxi, 23-25.
3. Ibn-Sall., 377; Bal., Ansāb, v, 169-170, 174-175.
4. Bal., op.cit., v, 169; Ibn-Sall., 144-145.
5. Agh., xix, 23.
6. Ibid., vii, 52.
the contending poets in their courts and ask them to vie in glory and boast of their lineage. The extent to which this rivalry could be carried is demonstrated by the attitude of Jarīr when he planted himself in the middle of the assembly and asked the caliph al-Walīd I to allow him to satirize ‘Adī ibn-ar-Riqa’ his poet laureate, who was a Yemenī; the Caliph said, "By God I would have desired you to carry him on your back in front of all people". Jarīr was not put off by this public rebuff and said:

If you forbid me [to satirize] him, then I hear and obey, otherwise I am by myself open to vituperation,[6] and managed, by a witty remark, to extract a smile from the caliph "who was impressed by Jarīr's courage". A serious ruler like al-Ḥajjāj did not find it trivial to ask the two poets Jarīr and al-Farazdaq to come to his court dressed in the garb which their ancestors used to put on in the Jahiliyya. The two poets were quick to grasp the hint and after leaving the princely court started hurling abuse at each other. It was reported that al-Farazdaq, dressed in silk and well groomed stood on the cemetery of Banū-Ḥiṣn while Jarīr, armed, stationed himself in al-Mirbad with crowds milling around them while some of their audience hurried to and fro carrying to each what his adversary had said.

With the exception of Ziyād who dogged al-Farazdaq and chased him out of Baṣra and al-Walīd ibn-ʿAbd-al-Malik who

1. Ibid.
3. Ibid., vii, 71; Ibn-Sall., 346, 368.
4. Ibid.
5. cf. Chapter III below.
ordered Jarīr and Ibn-Laja’ to be tortured for their transgression. The general trend was to encourage such activities. There were occasions, however, when, under the pretext of safeguarding general security or protecting public decency, the freedom of some poets who opposed those in power was restricted in various ways. Thus al-Farazdaq suffered imprisonment under the Yemeni Khalid al-Qasri and the Qaysī ‘Umar ibn-Hubayra for his staunch Tamīmī leanings. Later on and before the final collapse of the Umayyad rule the Mu’tazila roused public feelings against Bashshār who satirized their leader al-Ghazzāl; they levelled at him the charge of debasing public morality by corrupting youths through his obscene and pornographic poetry and had him banished from Baṣra for some time.

6. Popular appeal:

All these factors tended to heighten the importance of poetry in Baṣra and poets were hard put to it to provide poetry that would satisfy the different levels of Baṣrī community. They had to appease and in many cases to praise the rulers to ensure a consistent supply of funds. This explains the profusion of panegyric in the works of most poets as early as Abū-‘l-Aswad ad-Du’alī not excepting some Khārijīs such as ‘Imrān ibn-Ḥittān. Furthermore they had to defend their tribes or clans and attack their rivals, as we shall see presently.

1. Agh., vii, 69, 73-4 (where ‘Umar II is mentioned); Ibn-Sall., 369.
2. Ibn-Sall., 269; Agh., xix, 24; cf. Ch.IV below.
3. Agh., xviii, 141.
4. Bayan, 1, 36.
The poets, however, were also conscious of another remarkable development in their community which influenced in many ways and at times prompted their approach to poetry. The camel market-place of Baṣra, al-Mirbad, was rapidly acquiring the status that ‘Ukāz had previously held in pre-Islamic Arabia. It provided a convenient forum for exchanging merchandise and poetry and major poets from all over Iraq and other regions frequented it. The major Baṣrī poets especially Jarīr, al-Farazdaq, ar-Rā‘ī an-Numayrī and sometimes Dhū-‘r-Rumma had recognized circles in which they used to address their audience.¹ The importance of this activity was indicated by Jarīr when he told ar-Rā‘ī, "My people led me and my camel until they set us on the highway of al-Mirbad ... and for seven years my only concern has been not to earn them [the pleasures of] this world or the next, but to reproach the one who reproaches them."² In point of fact al-Mirbad was the focal point of all intellectual and literary activities throughout the active epoch of Baṣrī history. In addition most affairs of public concern were settled there. Al-Jarūd ibn-Sabra summed up its importance when he advised his friends to "frequent al-Mirbad because it dispels [bad] thoughts, sharpens the vision, brings all sorts of news and gathers together Rabi‘a and Mu‘ād".³

The audiences were huge and drawn from all quarters and the repercussions of any major achievement by a poet would

¹. Agh., xx, 169.
². Nag., 428, 431.
³. Bayān, 1, 272.
therefore resound throughout the Islamic empire, as the vanquished poet ar-Ra‘î discovered in his encounter with Jarîr, when the news of his ignominy had reached his people in the heart of the Ba‘rî desert before his speedy arrival.¹ Poets were therefore conscious of their receptive audience and did their utmost to impress them. On being told that the poetry of al-Farazdaq was appreciated only by learned men while his own was appreciated by the general public, Jarîr jubilantly remarked, "I am certainly Abū-Ḥazra, I have vanquished him by the Lord of Ka‘ba, for you can scarcely find a single learned man among a hundred men!"² Al-Farazdaq and al-Akhtal were reported to have agreed that despite their superiority over Jarîr in the quality of poetry, he surpassed them in popularity.³ The endeavour to appeal to the sentiments and susceptibilities of the populace was evidently at the core of the marked tendency on the part of the major poets to indulge in obscenities. The calumniation of chaste women and the employment of vulgar sexual terms which baffles the modern reader of their poetry⁴ seemed to have amused their public immensely, although a section of the community would naturally be averse to it and would view it with disgust as being against the spirit of Islam.⁵ The general mood of this group is indicated by the anecdote of Ibn-Sīrîn, the famous Ba‘rî Traditionist when he was asked by a man whether it was necessary to perform ablutions after reciting

4. The latest editions (1960) of the Diwans of Jarîr and al-Farazdaq printed in Beirut are expurgated.
5. cf. Ibn-Qut., 'Uyun, 1, 8.
poetry. The learned man was on the point of performing his prayer when he turned his face to the enquirer and recited the verse:—

Certainly the spouse of al-Farazdaq has become refractory; had she been satisfied with the thrust of his penis she would have settled down,[7] and he then continued with his prayer. ¹ Sa'īd ibn-al-Musayyab on being told that some people rejected poetry, said, 'They have adopted a foreign (a'jamī) mode of worship.'²

It was obvious, as we shall see later on, that most poets were not always serious in the charges against the women they slandered. The famous 'mukhadram' poet al-Nukhabbal as-Sa'dī regretted the false charges he had levelled at Khulayda when he had lampooned her brother az-Zibriqān ibn-Badr of Tamīm³ and had to make his confession publicly when he said:—

My judgment failed me over Khulayda, a failure for which I shall reproach my people and myself repent, I bear witness — and of God ask forgiveness — that I lied about her — and satire abounds with lies [8]⁴

Jarīr underlined the effectiveness of the comic in satire when he said, "When you compose satire make people laugh" and drove his point home by reciting a comically obscene verse he had composed on a Numayrī girl.⁵ It seems that the profusion and currency of such obscene poetry was in response to a general public demand and the impression is that it was regarded as an effective means of entertainment not

---

1. Agh., xix, 15.
2. Bayan, 1, 174.
3. Agh., xii, 42.
4. Ibid., xii, 43-4; Ibn-Qut., Sh., i, 383.
5. 'Iqd, vi, 151.
only in Basra but throughout the Islamic empire. Later on and following the lead of his predecessors, Bashshar supplied the various levels of Bašrī community with a more subtle brand of pornographic poetry which appealed to the tastes of the lower as well as the upper classes. His success in dominating the scene is borne out by the report that "there was no courting man or woman who did not recite his poetry, no [professional] mourner or songster who did not make money out of it, and no man of honour who has not feared him and dreaded the damaging effect of his tongue".¹ Unlike his predecessors he adopted two distinct styles to suit the audience he was addressing. In the case of dignitaries and rulers he preserved his classical style in its most meticulous form, but in composing his love and other lighter poems which were meant to entertain the general public he followed a very easy and immediate style that the ordinary man in the street could understand. It was therefore fashionable in Bašra, especially with the young generation, to learn and recite his poetry, as was stated by the Mu'tazila and other opponents in their vehement campaign against the poet.²

7. Currency and transmission of poetry:

The earnestness with which people received this poetry extended beyond the limits of Bašra. People as far afield as Medina followed the latest reports with enthusiasm and

¹. Agb., iii, 26.
². Ibid., iii, 41; cf. Chapter VII, p.345.
interest. Sa‘īd ibn-al-Musayyab, the Madanī faqīh was about to perform his prayer when ‘Abd-ar-Rahmān ibn-Ḥarmala brought him the latest interchanges between Jarīr and Ibn-Laja’. He listened silently to the verses of Ibn-Laja’ but when those of Jarīr were recited he started to shout, "He devoured him! He devoured him!". Another Madanī shaykh used to assert, "I never liked to join an assembly unless there was somebody who related anecdotes about al-Ḥasan [al-Baṣrī] or recited al-Farazdaq’s poetry". The absorbing interest which ordinary people all over the Islamic empire showed in learning this poetry is indicated by the story of the young girl in Yamāma who was claimed to have memorized almost the entire works of Jarīr and al-Farazdaq, and the ‘Udhri Bedouin who showed remarkable knowledge of Jarīr’s poetry in the presence of the caliph ‘Abd-al-Malik. Inside the town itself the enthusiasm sometimes amounted almost to the level of frenzy experienced nowadays with respect to football teams or favourite racing horses. Crowds used to pester al-Farazdaq and cluster at his doorstep awaiting his departure in order to hear his verses. Even the exigencies of war did not dissipate their interest in poetry as the episode of al-Muhallab and a certain group of his soldiers during their struggle against the Azāriqa

1. Ibn-Sall., 371.
2. Bayān, iii, 142-3.
3. Agh., vii, 56.
4. Ibid., vii, 54.
5. Agh., xix, 36.
testified.  'Ubayd ibn-Hilāl the Khārijī who was recommended by al-Muhallab as the best man qualified to pass a judgement on Jarīr and al-Farazdaq was in the habit of inviting some of his adversaries at the end of the day when hostilities had ceased and he would then say, "Which would you like better: that I recite you Qur'ān or poetry?" They would say, "As for the Qur'ān our knowledge of it is as good as yours, but recite us some poetry", and he would tell them jokingly that he had known beforehand that they would prefer poetry to the Qur'ān and he would then go on to recite poetry and listen to their recitation until they got tired and dispersed.

The poets themselves, especially Jarīr and al-Farazdaq, were not disinterested craftsmen who allowed their production to trickle through to the public unaided. Sometimes they went out of their way to ensure that people did hear them. Al-Farazdaq once visited the Banū-Hujaym in their mosque and recited them his poetry, but when Jarīr got wind of it and paid them a visit the following day to recite his own poetry one of their shaykhs exhorted him to fear God and to remember that the mosque had been erected for the sole purpose of remembering God and performing prayer. Jarīr countered their rebuff with a cynical piece of satire. Khalīd ibn-Kulthūm al-Kalbī who used to record the poetry of Jarīr and al-Farazdaq for his own use, narrowly escaped a similar fate at the hands of al-Farazdaq. The latter asked him to

1. cf. P.91 above.
2. Agh., vii, 55.
3. Ibid., vi, 7.
recite a certain number of Jarīr's poems which he did without hesitation, but when he was asked to recite al-Farázdaq's replies to them he fumbled and proved ignorant of them. Al-Farázdaq became infuriated and retorted, "Would you memorize what he had composed on me and fail to learn my replies to him? By God I will satirize Kalb and disgrace them for all times if you delay in recording my naqṣ'īd or fail to learn and recite them to me". The old man had to stay with the poet for a complete month before he could learn and recite the poems satisfactorily.¹

There is, moreover, sufficient evidence to show that most of this poetry had been committed to writing by poets or their scribes and also by transmitters. Sources abound in references to scribes - or ráwīs as they were more usually entitled - who used to accompany poets and act in a sense as their private secretaries. Thus Jarīr dictated his famous satire on ar-Ra‘ī to a mawla of Banū-Yarbū‘ in Bāṣra who was fond of Jarīr's poetry,² and when he stood in al-Mirbad the following morning he shouted, "O Banū-Tamīm! Write down! Write down! (qaiyydu)"³ Al-Farázdaq had several ráwīs among whom 'Ubayd⁴ and Abū-Šafqal⁵ were mentioned by name. It seems that 'Ubayd in his capacity as a scribe used to accompany the poet judging from the episode concerning Dhū-'r-Rumma when al-Farázdaq asked 'Ubayd to add the verses of

1. Agh., xix, 11-12.
2. Ibid., vii, 50; his rawiya was named Ḥusayn, Naq., 430.
5. Agh., xix, 36.
this poet to his own collection against the will of their rightful owner.\textsuperscript{1} Even in al-Mirbad where poets used to address their audience in person it seemed that the practice had been to have their \textipa{rawīs} with them; al-Farazdaq certainly had when Jarīr lampooned ar-Rā'ī.\textsuperscript{2}

The case for committing poetry to writing was made by Dhū-'r-Rumma who, paradoxically, used to deny his literacy on the understanding that it was regarded as a defect,\textsuperscript{3} for reasons which we shall consider later on.\textsuperscript{4} On one occasion he told the Bāṣrī philologist ‘Īsā ibn-‘Umar,\textsuperscript{5} "Commit my poetry to writing, for recording is nearer to my heart than memorizing, since the Bedouin (\textipa{afrābi}) may forget a word and spend the whole night in an attempt to remember it and failing in that he may easily substitute for it another word of the same measure and recite it to people, while the note-book does not forget or substitute any word for another."\textsuperscript{6} On another occasion he showed his appreciation to the same philologist by telling him, "You write down and transmit what you hear, whereas those (i.e. who transmit verbally) have no compunction about altering what I have hewn out of rock".\textsuperscript{7} This meticulous care for sound transmission must have guided him in his choice for his \textipa{rawiya} of Ṣāliḥ ibn-Sulayman who was reported to have delivered one of his poems

\begin{flushleft}
\textsuperscript{1.} Ibid., xix, 22-3; Muwash\textsuperscript{,}, 107; Ibn-Sall\textsuperscript{,}, 470-1; \textipa{‘Umda}, ii, 285.
\textsuperscript{2.} Agh\textsuperscript{,}, vii, 51.
\textsuperscript{3.} Ibn-Qut\textsuperscript{,}, Sh., 507; Agh\textsuperscript{,}, xvi, 121; ‘Askari\textsuperscript{,}, Diwan al-Ma\textsuperscript{‘}ānī, ii, 120.
\textsuperscript{4.} cf. Chapter VI, P. 315 below.
\textsuperscript{5.} cf. Chapter I, p. 64, above; Chapter VI below, p. 314.
\textsuperscript{6.} Jahiz\textsuperscript{,}, Hayawan, i, 21.
\textsuperscript{7.} Muwash\textsuperscript{,}, 178.
\end{flushleft}
so perfectly that a Bedouin who had been listening could not help saying, "I bear witness that you are a fāqīh who excels in recitation", thinking him to be reciting Qur'ān. But even committing to writing was not always of much help to the ṭawī when the poet himself puzzled him by frequent changes as in the case of the same Dhu-'r-Rumma who was constantly revising his poetry so that one of his ṭawīs complained that he had spoiled his poetry through this process of revision.

Some poets acted as ṭawīs of other contemporary poets as in the case of Dhu-’r-Rumma who was the ṭawī of ar-Ra‘ī3 and that of Salm al-Khāṣir who was the disciple and transmitter of Bashshār. On another plane, transmission of poetry was rapidly becoming a lucrative profession in the courts of caliphs and emirs as the careers of Ḥammād ar-Rawīya, Qatāda, Khalaf al-Aḥmar and many others testify.5

This elaborate machinery for propagating poetry was a conscious activity in which poets, their ṭawīs and a variety of other interested parties played their parts. But the poets were also conscious of the immediate impact of their poetry on their audience. They did realise - as certainly did al-Farazdaq6 - that only a fraction of their elaborate compositions would actually stick in the memory of the

1. Agh., xvi, 112.
2. Muwash., 184, also cf. 180-1.
3. Ibid., 170, 183.
5. cf. Chapter VI below.
6. cf. P. 87 above.
average listener, and so a conscious effort was made to concentrate on a limited number of lines in the qaṣīda and charge them with powerful emotional content to ensure the widest possible circulation. Thus Jarīr was not satisfied with 80 lines which he had composed on ar-Ra‘ī until he made the celebrated verse:—

Lower your eyes! for you are of Numāyir, thus approaching neither Ka‘b nor Killab [9], when he ordered his scribe to rest for the night saying, "I have attained my ultimate desire."¹ Al-Farazdaq when asked why he preferred his shorter poems said, "Because I found them more firmly established in memories and more rapid in spreading in assemblies."² It was, perhaps, for this reason that the same poet was deemed the possessor of the largest number of quotable verses (mucallads).³ His esteem for this brand of poetry drove him sometimes to bullying other poets into relinquishing their memorable verses which he would then proceed to include in his own poems. He did this with Dhū-‘r-Rumma,⁴ ash-Shamardal,⁵ Jamīl,⁶ Ibn-Wayyāda⁷ and many others,⁸ and used to say, "The straying verses of

---

¹ Nag., 432, cf. 429.
² Agh., xix, 33.
³ Ibn-Sall., 259, where he defines the mucallad as "the independent and famous verse which is quoted as a proverb."
⁴ Muwash., 107; Ibn-Sallām, 470-1.
⁵ Ibid., 108; 'Umda, ii, 285; Nag., 375.
⁶ Muwash., 109.
⁷ Agh., xix, 7; Khiz., i, 153; Muwash., 108.
⁸ He plagiarized two verses of ar-Ra‘ī (Muwash., 108-9) and was accused of including in his poetry enormous amounts of Jahili poetry (ibid., 110-111) a charge which impelled al-Asma‘ī to judge that nine tenths of his poetry were plagiarized which Karzubānī rightly considers as unfair. (Muwash., 105-6).
poetry are nearer to my heart than straying camels."¹ Bashshār underlined the same tendency when he boasted of the profusion of his poetry by pointing to the enormous number of "rare" (nādir) verses which his poems embodied.² Similarly he fell out with his disciple Salm al-Khaṣīr because the latter tampered with one of his master's coveted verses and rendered it more popular which resulted in people forgetting Bashshār's and remembering only Salm's.³

Thus poets were all the time aware of their audience and conscious of the extent to which their verses would travel and on many occasions made no secret of their knowledge as their works abound in references to the fact. Al-Farazdaq called his poems "runaway rhymes" (sing. qāfiya sharūd)⁴ and indicated the extent of their circulation in a variety of ways. Thus he says of them in one of his poems:

They approach the sun whether it rises in the East or sets in the West,
Their withers⁵ proclaiming their noble lineage in every mountain-path and frontier,¹⁰⁶

and tells Jarīr:

You trouble yourself, O Jarīr, for nothing, whereas the qaṣidas have gone out to transmitters,
How can you bring back those of them that have become well known in 'Uman and the mountains of Egypt?¹¹⁷

¹. Muwash., 106; cf. also Agh., xix, 22.
². cf. Diwan, i, Introduction, p. 34.
³. Agh., iii, 49.
⁴. Nag., 125.
⁵. He likens his poems to she-camels.
⁶. Nag., 477.
⁷. Ibid., 774; cf. Far., 11, 142, 202, 216, 246, 346.
Jarīr makes similar claims when he says:

I fitted out [and dispatched] abroad qasīdas, each of them swift to travel and reach its destination, vying with every party of riders, They overtake those who are before them and appear in Najd, cleaving the earth.[12]

So also when he boasts:

Certainly I am the composer of poems, each wonderful, that alights wherever the night traveller chants, It comes forth of transmitters' mouths as though it is the blade of a sword which gains strength when it is shaken.[13]

8. Relations between poets:

The activities of poets, though not altogether divorced from the general pattern of development embracing the other intellectual activities especially those concerned with language and literature, had been greatly influenced by social considerations as a result of the general involvement in some form or other of the vast majority of poets in the affairs of their community. The frequent practice of linking poetry with sharaf (nobility) in judging the excellence of poets indicates the powerful influence of social norms on poetry. On siding with Banū-Salīt against Jarīr, al-Baʿīth passed the judgement, "We have found poetry and nobility (sharaf) among the offspring of an-Nawār". The same idea occurred in the poetry of ʿāṣ-Ṣalātān al-ʿAbdī when he judged between Jarīr and al-Farazdaq saying:

Certainly Kulayb should be pleased with their poetry, while Darim and Agari' should be pleased with their glory.[14]

1. Nag., 688.
2. Jar., 446; cf. also 417; Nag., 296, 341, 342.
3. cf. Chapter III, p.125 below, and Chapter VI.
4. Ibn-Qut, Sh., i, 477.
It is reported that al-Farazdaq was content that the poet had recognized the nobility of his folk and added the comment, "Poetry is but the nobility (muru’a) of the ignoble whereas it comes at the bottom of a noble (sharīr) man’s qualifications," while Jarīr was dissatisfied and satirized as-Šalātan.¹

This close relationship between social and literary criteria is manifest in various ways especially in relations between poets. The preceding episode involving as-Šalātan is only one of a number of encounters in which the literary element is embedded in the major considerations of society. Poets who opposed Jarīr like al-Ba‘ith,² ar-Ra‘ī,³ al-Akhtal,⁴ Khulayd ‘Aynayn,⁵ Dhū-R-Rumma,⁶ Ibn-Laja’,⁷ Aḥmar ibn-Ghudāna,⁸ Surāqa al-Bāriqī⁹ and many others;¹⁰ or those who opposed al-Farazdaq as Nufay‘ Dhu-Tt-Ahdam,¹¹ Mukharriq ibn-Shurayk,¹² Ash‘hab ibn-Rumayla¹³ and others,¹⁴ although

1. Ibid., 478, note 1.
5. Ibn-Sall., 345, 385.
6. Ibid., 469; Agh., vii, 61.
12. Diwan of Farazdaq, i, 370; Naq., 846.
prompted in their attitudes largely by social or political considerations, yet expressed their leanings towards the poet of their choice by means of praising his poetry, because the success of a poet as a poet implies also his success in defending the honour of his tribe. This understanding had been at the centre of the repeated endeavours of a dignitary such as Muḥammad ibn-‘Umayr ibn-‘Uṭārid who used to bribe poets to proclaim the superiority of the Mujāshi‘ī poet al-Farazdaq. He is reported to have offered a prize of 4,000 dirhams to any poet who composed a poem declaring the superiority of the latter over Jarīr. Only Surāq al-Bāriqī accepted the offer. Ibn-‘Uṭārid is further reported to have despatched a 1,000 dirhams, a mule, clothes and wine to al-Akḥṭal when he visited Bishr ibn-Marwān, the governor of Iraq, saying, "Do not give succour against our poet, i.e. Farazdaq, and satirize this dog who lampoons the Banū- Darīm". The foregoing lists of poets mentioned in connection with the two poets Jarīr and al-Farazdaq underline the powerful influence these two giants had on the literary scene. Until their death in 110/728 they were the central figures round which the majority of their contemporaries revolved. Being the most powerful exponents of tribal rivalry they deliberately imposed, on the vast majority of their contemporaries, both inside and outside Baṣra, the thankless task of having to array themselves on this side of the fence.

1. cf. Mub., Kāmil, iii, 179-180 for his eminence.
2. Ṭab., vii, 67.
or the other. These poetic alliances were, on the literary plane, a microcosm of the social environment.¹ Poetic interchanges came to be represented as wars as in the line of Jarīr:

You have tasted from me the tang of a bitter war, and certainly you will be unsafe if you compete with Qays,[15]² or in that of al-Farazdaq:—

I have inclined the war towards you, certainly I am the one who changes the adversary and leans towards him when the accomplished warrior flinches,[16]³ while poems themselves were sometimes represented as weapons or thunderbolts as in the following line of Jarīr:—

God has prepared for poets on account of me thunderbolts to which they bend their[ir] necks.[17]⁴

Jarīr was notorious for his satires against other poets⁵ although he claimed that he had never initiated any feud but always acted in self-defence.⁶ It is asserted that poets used to expose themselves to his satire⁷ and no less than 80 of them were vanquished as a result. The claim was made that of all the poets who had joined battle with him only al-Farazdaq and al-Akhtal could survive the ferocity of his attacks.⁸ Thus ar-Ra‘ī — who was stated to have been

2. Nas., 427.
3. Ibid., 575.
4. Ibid., 443.
6. Agh., vii, 56; Sh., 438.
8. Agh., vii, 40; cf. 59.
the fahl of Wudjar until Jarir disgraced him - used to tell people, "Why do people blame me for being defeated by such an [invincible] poet?" Surqa al-Bariqî introduced himself to Jarir as "one of those whom God has disgraced at your hands".

This fear of Jarir was shared by most of his contemporaries. It is reported that al-Farazdaq used to panic whenever the news reached him that Jarir had composed a poem until he made sure that it was not about him. Jarir's assumption of superiority, if not al-Farazdaq's acknowledgement of it is illustrated by the story that on meeting al-Farazdaq once in Syria his rival exclaimed, "I never expected you to visit a place in which I am staying", to which al-Farazdaq snapped, "How often have I shattered the expectations of weaklings". 'Adi ibn-ar-Riqa' al-'Amili the poet laureate of Walid I had to seek refuge with the caliph from him. Al-'Ajjaq intimated to his son Ru'ba when the latter discovered the terror his father experienced when Jarir threatened him, "By God had I known that the only means to deliver me from him lay in urinating I would have done it."

The public court of a distinguished Basri emir witnessed the humiliation of Dhu-'r-Rumma as a result of a contest with Jarir.

1. Ibn-Sall., 435.
2. Nag., 430.
3. Ansab, v, 175.
5. Agh., xix, 34; cf. Ibid., 29 for another anecdote.
8. Ibid., vii, 60.
Despite the antagonistic attitude of many poets towards their fellow poets as a consequence of the endemic rivalries that beset Baṣra, poets in general were aware of the community of interests that bound them to each other as a distinct class. Judging by their own admissions¹ and by their pronouncements on fellow poets,² they were conscious of themselves as poets. Their efforts to excel one another,³ and the usual practice of murāfada (aiding another poet against his adversary by allowing the former the liberty to use some of the poet's verses) in which a number of poets were usually involved⁴ all pointed to a growing consciousness of literary affinity. They were furthermore aware of the distinctiveness of poets who followed a completely different course than the vast majority. The growth of a formidable school of rujjāz with its centre in Baṣra, was, among other things as we shall see later on, a response to a literary and philological challenge that the poetic atmosphere in Baṣra had engendered. Ideological differences although they produced a different kind of poetry, did not inhibit reciprocal appreciation. When the names of as-Sayyid al-Ḥimyari (a Shi'i) and 'Imrān ibn-Ḥittān (a Khārījī) were mentioned in the presence of al-Farazdaq he promptly said, "If they had concerned themselves with the theme other people followed (i.e. poetic feuds or panegyism) we could have been nothing in their company, but

1. cf. Jarīr, Dīwān, 417, 446; Farazdaq, Dīwān, ii, 159.
2. cf. Mūwašš., 172; Khiz., i, 107; Agh., i, 65; iv, 138; 'Īqāda, vi, 236.
3. e.g. cf. 'Umda, i, 209; Agh., xix, 32, between Jarīr and Farazdaq.
4. e.g. cf. Ibn-Sall., 473-5; Agh., vii, 61-3; xvi, 116-8; 'Umda, ii, 286.
God has caused them to busy themselves with composing poetry regarding their respective ideologies (madh'hab)."¹ ‘Aṣīm ibn-al-Ḥadathān, the leader of Khawārij in Baṣra told al-Farazdaq once, "My son is the poet of believers (muʿminūn) while you are the poet of unbelievers (kāfirūn)."²

The preceding remark of al-Farazdaq bracketing the majority of poets as being inspired by rivalries, tribal and literary, overlooked the scores of poets who, though not altogether divorced from tribal life, were expressing other developments which had at the same time been transforming the Baṣrī scene.³ The growing influence of the state which occupied in a sense the energies of a poet like Ibn-Mufarrigh who devoted almost all his poetry to satirizing the sons of Ziyād,⁴ also influenced the career of a tribal chief like Ḥāritha ibn-Badr who was described as 'the poet of Tamīm and its hero'.⁵ Although he used to engage in traditional poetic feuds⁶ his encounters with Anas ibn-Zunaym⁷ represented a different trend exhibiting the ascendancy of both official power and individual consciousness in the urban settlement. The growing tendency of individuals to behave as individuals or citizens and not as tribesmen loomed large in their verses as well as in those of Abū-ʾl-Aswad ad-Duʿālī. Politico-

1. Agh., vii, 3.
2. 'Iqd., 1, 84.
3. cf. Chapter 1, p. 55.
5. Siffin, 29.
7. Ibid., 22-3, 32-3.
religious movements inspired poets like 'Imrān ibn-Ḥiṭṭān, as-Sayyid al-Ḥimyārī and others who represented another streak in Başrī poetry, reflecting yet another facet of Başrī life.
CHAPTER III
POETRY AND TRIBAL RELATIONS

1. A Baṣrī genre:

The resurgence of tribalism contributed in a large measure to the excessive cultivation of that genre of satirical poetry which came to be known as the naqāʿīd and which involved a vast number of Umayyad poets, both from Baṣra and from elsewhere. But the vast majority of those poets were Baṣrīs and for that matter Tamīmīs. Except for the intrusion of the famous Taghlibī poet, al-Akhṭal – which came about at the instigation of the Umayyad ruler of Iraq, Bishr ibn-Marwan – this literary form developed as an indigenous product of Baṣra. Although it was known in very rudimentary forms in the Jahiliyya\(^1\) and the early period of Islam\(^2\) it nowhere grew and expanded in the fashion attained in the region of Baṣra. This development was closely linked with tribal consciousness and rivalry which were nowhere as pronounced as they were in Baṣra and its bādiya. Although the initial phases of these poetic feuds had been a reflection of localised petty incidents, they soon inflated and assumed such dimensions as to engulf not only minor families in the heart of the Baṣrī desert, which was the original case, but the whole tribal and for that matter political structure in the entire region of Baṣra, and they

1. cf. Anh., x, 20; xvi, 53; Aʿsha, Diwan, 74-82; Ibn-Ath., Kāmil, i, 495-505.
sometimes overflowed to other parts of the empire as well. The evolution of this genre of Baṣrī poetry can, in effect, legitimately be viewed as a fairly accurate index of the social and political evolution of Baṣra itself.

The intimate relationship that developed between the bādiya and the town and the subsequent influence of each on the other paved the way for the rapid transformation of that genre of tribal poetry that had been initially provoked by the challenges, generally limited in scope, that desert life usually imposed on Bedouins. The relapse in times of crisis and political unrest into pre-Islamic blood-feuds and similar practices - which we shall consider later¹ - played a vital role in stimulating a substantial part of this poetry. But more often than not the petty disputes over watering-places, plots of grazing ground, personal animosities and the like - potential causes of wars previously - would generate feuds in which poetry would take the place of weapons. The prospects and scope of physical warfare between tribes had been largely restricted and poetry, subsequently, served as a convenient means of expressing the suppressed passions. With the passage of time the rudimentary beginnings of these poetic feuds, mostly the results of localized disputes, progressively extended in dimension in response to the accelerating tempo of social and political development in Baṣra and the empire in general and in time came to express the manifold relationships, political,

¹. cf. Chapter V below.
tribal, social, that had existed in Baṣra and elsewhere. The dynamism of this tribal poetry was such that it continued to take pride of place not only in the Baṣrī community of the time but also in subsequent epochs. It is worthwhile to unravel the voluminous mass of this poetry and separate the individual threads with a view to indicating how far they reflected the prevailing conditions.

2. Petty disputes provoke poetic feuds:

The new generation of Baṣrī poets on whose shoulders fell the responsibility of expressing the strains and stresses of their developing community had been brought up mostly on the outskirts of the town or in its bādiya proper. Although most of them were born in Islamic times they were nevertheless nurtured in an environment controlled more strongly by Jahili rather than Islamic norms. Their relative remoteness from the miṣr where the restrictive power of the state was more directly felt allowed them a corresponding measure of freedom to exploit tribal differences in a manner if not always in harmony with the general drive towards eliminating tribal rivalry - yet compatible with the general trend to carry this rivalry to all dimensions short of actual war, as long as the power of the state safeguarded the rights of all concerned. To give vent to this tendency the usual practice of poets was to seize upon petty incidents and use them as a means of expressing the general restiveness and unruliness of Bedouins.
Foremost among this group of poets was al-Farazdaq who is reported to have already been an accomplished poet by 36 A.H. During the caliphate of 'Uthman while he was still a youth he had exchanged lampoons with other poets who used to dread the severity of his satire. His father introduced him to the caliph 'Alī as "one of the poets of Mu'ājar." His career as a poet illustrates most vividly the tribal element in Basrī life in all its ramifications. Thus his early encounters with al-Ash'hab ibn-Rumayla helps to elucidate the state of affairs at an earlier stage when tribal feelings reasserted themselves immediately after the death of 'Uthman and continued to ride high until the appointment of Ziyād in 45/665. The episode demonstrates as well the usual pattern of involvement whereby a petty incident would produce a chain reaction with far-reaching consequences that necessitated official intervention. It is related that al-Farazdaq, for a reason unknown to us, satirized the Banū-Fuqaym of Tamīm when they had reached an amicable settlement with the Banū-al-‘Anbar of Tamīm with regard to the ownership of a well. He reproached the former saying:-

The delegation of Banū-Fuqaym returned with the meanest [articles] that delegations could ever bring home, They came back to us with cauldrons balancing [on camel backs] while the opportune luck secured [for the fortunate ones] the abundant well [18]

1. Agh., xix, 6; Ṣar., Mu'āj, 266.
3. Ibid., 6.
4. Nag., 215; Far., i, 139; cf. Ibn-Sall., 272 where he indicates that the Banū-Fuqaym went after blood-revenge but settled for blood-money.
5. Ibid.
when the satire reached the Banū-Fugaym they were infuriated and complained to the poet's father who summoned him but the poet dismissed the charge as a lie and to prove his innocence composed another piece in which he said:

O people I have not intended to slander you, and the one accused is entitled to excuse oneself,
Do desist, for had I wanted to satirize you, my satire would have emerged - as is well known - bright and renowned,
Whenever an erring one of Ma‘add composes a scabby poem it is attributed to me in its entirety,
Should someone else utter it and I receive the blame? This is certainly a verdict that ought to be changed. [19]^1

But on hearing his second composition his father could detect the similarity with the earlier piece and handed him over to the Banū-Fugaym, who were after all their close relatives. 2
Although they did not exact retribution at the time they never forgave him for it, and the incident continued to poison the relations between their respective clans for a long time. Shortly afterwards a group of Banū-Fugaym and their related branch of Banū-Nahshal trespassed upon his father's watering-place and he had to repel them, injuring some of them^3 and composed a few lines defying both. ^4

Although the Banū-Fugaym later on retaliated by hamstringing the camel of Ghalib, the poet's father, and thereby ultimately causing his death according to one report, ^5 their immediate major concern had been the poetic feud in which they found themselves involved. It seemed that they had no poet of their own and

---

1. Nag., 215.
2. Ibn-Sall., 272; Nag., 215.
3. Far., i, 204; Nag., 216.
4. Far., ibid.,
so were hard put to it to find one. They seized the opportunity when al-Ash’hab ibn-Rumayla, the poet of Banū-Nahshal, proposed to one of their maidens; they made it a condition that the consummation of his marriage depended on his satirizing al-Farazdaq.\(^1\) The feud between the two poets intensified and assumed such dangerous proportions that the Banū-Fuqaym and Banū-Nahshal had to appeal to Ziyād against al-Farazdaq.\(^2\) Already his wayward conduct with another girl of Banū-Minqar of Tamīm whom he had saved from a serpent and attempted to take advantage of her on that score\(^3\) brought upon him the hostility of yet another Tamīmī clan: the Banū-Minqar. Although the latter managed to take their revenge through blemishing the good name of his sister Ji‘thin by accusing her of an affair with one of their youths,\(^4\) it is evident that such incidents were taken as pretext for practising their cherished sport of mud-slinging. The petty personal calumnies were only the additional fuel that intensified the already kindled fire of tribal rivalry. This is substantiated by the fact that most of the original issues were quickly forgotten and the major theme of tribal glory gradually took pride of place. Thus al-Faraqdaq used

1. *Agh.*, xix, 43.
to link the Banū-Fuqaym with baseness in most of his satires, as in his verse:—

Baseness alights wherever the Fuqaym alight, and it marches [with them] even if they march in the remotest part of the world [20]¹

He used similar language with the Banū-Nahshal when he told them:

I swear by my life, 0 Banū-Nahshal, that though numbers [of followers] are small in your abodes, yet your baseness is not small [21]²

After asking God to widen the gulf of hostility between them and his people, he told them bluntly in another piece:—

You have become angry against us because Mujāshi³ have overtopped you, and because the one who defends your honour⁴ is a slave [22]⁵

Although the sources preserved for us only fragmentary pieces of poetry in connection with these early poetic feuds, they abound in references to their social implications. Despite their limited scope they were the portents of future large-scale confrontations. They were actually only one aspect of a general resurgence of tribal spirit following the murder of 'Uthmān. The early years of the Umayyad regime until 45/665 witnessed the mild governorship of 'Abdallāh ibn-'Āmir whose leniency at a time of anarchy and unrest following the tumultuous years of the first civil war only intensified the unruliness of Baṣrī tribes. When it had

1. Far., i, 309; cf. also, i, 135, 151.
2. Ibid., ii, 91.
3. i.e. the poet’s clan.
4. i.e. al-Ash‘ar ibn-Rumayla.
5. Far., i, 151; cf. also 377-381; For a similar invective against Minqar cf. ibid., ii, 35.
been urged upon him to take some stern measures against them
he was reported to have said, "I hate to reform them by
corrupting myself."¹ Muʿawiya had to remove him in favour
of Ziyād who was intent on stamping out all forms of rebellion.
He was aware of the adverse effects the defiant activities of
such individuals as al-Farazdaq would have on the mīr. In
fact al-Farazdaq attracted the attention of Ziyād more than
once. On one occasion he stood up in the public place in
al-Mirbad and in a Jahili fashion invited those around him
to plunder his belongings.² As his father had already
fallen foul of the authorities for doing the same thing³
Ziyād regarded it as a vicious example instigating other
people to follow his suit,⁴ and sent cavalry after him. The
poet escaped and took refuge in the desert. The rude manner
in which he addressed Muʿwāyja concerning the award of al-
Ḥutāt⁵ infuriated him all the more.⁶ But Ziyād seemed at
first to have satisfied himself with keeping him away from
the mīr. It is reported that the governor used to spend
six months in Kūfa and the other six months in Başra and the
poet managed to avoid meeting him by reversing the sequence,
living in Başra while Ziyād was in Kūfa and the reverse.⁷

When the Banû-Fugaym and the Banû-Nahshal approached Ziyād

¹. Ibn-Ath., Kāmil, iii, 368.
². Tab., ii, 95.
³. cf. Chapter V, p. 239 below.
⁵. cf. P. 34 above.
⁶. Nāṣ. 608; cf. Chapter II, p. 84 above.
concerning the poet in 50/669\(^1\) his fury was intense and he ordered an extensive campaign to arrest him. No one in Iraq could possibly protect him against Ziyād\(^2\) and he had no alternative but to seek refuge outside the jurisdiction of the governor in Hijāz with its Umayyad ruler Saʿīd ibn-al-ʿĀṣ.\(^3\) He had to remain in exile until the death of Ziyād in 53/672 when he returned to his native town.\(^4\)

The stringent measures of Ziyād\(^5\) which also helped to bolster up the governorship of his son and successor ʿUbayd-allah, acted as a brake on the excesses of the preceding period. The consequence, in Baṣra and its bādiya, was a relative calm as far as tribal relations were concerned. Yet Ziyād and especially his son ʿUbayd-allah contributed in their own way to the general flare up of tribal animosity as had their predecessor ʿAbdallāh ibn-ʿAmir.\(^6\) ʿUbayd-allah was credited with being the pioneer in seeking in a systematic manner statements disparaging Arab tribes (known as mathālib) and is reported to have taken a special interest in collecting them to counter the charges against him.\(^7\) He was also renowned, as has already been noted,\(^8\) for kindling rivalry between poets to distract attention. But otherwise, both of them were alive to the explosive nature of poetic

---

1. Ṭab., ii, 94.
2. Ibid., ii, 99; Agh., xix, 31; Ibn-Sall., 251.
3. Ṭab., ii, 108.
4. Ibid.
8. cf. P.92 above.
activities run riot. The preceding experience of Ziyād with al-Farazdaq, and that of ‘Ubaydallah with Ibn-Mufarrigh, which we shall consider later on, indicated that direct intervention by the emir was sometimes the only means to bring recalcitrant poets to heel.

3. The ṭarīq becomes the forum of poetic feuds:

Meanwhile the growing importance of the ṭarīq and the role it increasingly came to play in the lives of tribes whether in Baṣra itself or its bādiya is reflected in the tendency of the Bedouins to carry into the town the poetic feuds that had initially been the natural products of their desert environment. The exchanges that had reflected at an earlier stage petty family disputes in the bādiya now served, in addition, to express the wider issues of tribal and political rivalries in the ṭarīq. The stern reaction of Ziyād to the activities of al-Farazdaq reflected his realisation of this tendency which gathered momentum after him. The tortuous development of this tendency with its various ramifications are best demonstrated by the celebrated case of Banū-Salīṭ with Banū-‘l-Khaṭafā of Kulayb the clan of Jarīr, both of whom belonged to the Tamīmī sub-tribe of Yarbū‘. The two family groups quarrelled over the ownership of a watering-place and thereupon the Banū-‘l-Khaṭafā, a family reputed for poetic excellence, started satirizing the Salīṭ. The latter, finding themselves at a loss since none amongst them was a poet, had recourse to one of their cousins, Ghassān ibn-Dhuḥayl and contracted his assistance
against their adversaries. The young Jarīr defended the honour of his family against Ghassān and several others.¹

Judging by what Abū-'Ubayda reported of the sequence of these exchanges,² it is evident that the poetic exchanges turned out to be of far greater significance to the people involved than the original incident which provoked them. As in an earlier case³ the poetic feud continued to rage long after the initial incidents had been forgotten. Judging by the ceremonial manner in which the poet, true to form as his Jahili counterpart, addressed the tribal gathering,⁴ it looked as though poetry as such satisfied a public need which the contending parties deeply felt. The spontaneity of the initial interchanges is manifest in their form and content. Most of them⁵ were brief and composed in the rajaz metre, which originally, it seems, served the purpose of improvisation. The intensely personal tint reflected in the vulgar abuse which the two poets hurled at each other's person and kinsmen captured the original spirit of the feud. Thus Jarīr dwelt on depicting the sexual virility of a group of asses which he would like to give as a special present to his adversaries.⁶

But this obscene element, in which both poets indulged, gradually gave place to a more thoughtful kind of poetry in which the poet was more intent on presenting the merits of

2. Ibid., 6 sqq.
3. cf. p.117 above.
5. Ibid., 3-36.
6. Ibid., 3.
his people in a more favourable light especially when the feud was joined later by the other Tamīmī poet al-Ba‘īth who belonged to the Banū-Mujāshi‘, the traditional rivals of Yarbū‘. This development was natural since the scope of Jarīr and Ghassān who both belonged to the same sub-tribe was thus restricted, and bound to result in interchanges that were, on the whole, more personal than communal. But through the intervention of al-Ba‘īth the range of the localised feud was greatly extended to bring into play the more enduring differences that had existed between the two major Tamīmī groups of Yarbū‘ and Mujāshi‘ since the Jahiliyya. Moreover the involvement of al-Ba‘īth in the feud as such is indicative of the process by which a minor dispute could develop into a multilateral conflict. The ease with which a remark could set a chain reaction in motion readily demonstrates that the general atmosphere was propitious for such encounters.

Al-Ba‘īth was remotely related to Banū-Salīṭ through his ancestral grandmother, an-Nawar.¹ Seizing the occasion of having his stolen camels retrieved by a group of them, he was quick to show his gratitude by expressing his solidarity with them in their feud and by throwing his weight wholeheartedly on their side against their adversaries. He is reported to have said, "We have found poetry and nobility among the offspring of an-Nawar."² The Banū-Kulayb were annoyed and found it difficult to understand why a Mujāshi‘

1. Naq., 38.
2. Ibid.
should interfere in a matter that concerned two related clans of Yarbū‘ only, as was expressed by the Yarbū‘ī dignitary, ‘Aṭiyya ibn-Ji‘āl.\(^1\) It is, however, more likely that the Salīḥ who had been known for their ineptitude in versification, had invited al-Ba‘īth, as they had already done with other poets, to come to their aid against Jarīr who was obviously getting the better of their poet, Ghassān.\(^2\) Thus al-Ba‘īth inadvertently dragged his own clan, the Banū-Muŷashi, into the arena and exposed them to the bitter sarcasm of Jarīr. By this time, the two poets were already caught up in the tribal frenzy which had been brewing in Başra and its bādiya and found themselves, more than at any time before, hard put to it to whitewash the records of their respective clans and to undermine the prestige of their opponents. Al-Ba‘īth was no mean poet\(^3\) and some of his tirades against Kulayb were regarded by them as the most effective lampoon levelled at them, especially the following lines which they continued to remember with bitterness:\(^4\)

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{Are you not a Kulaybī who, when a decision is imposed upon him, submits as a wife to her husband succumbs,}\nonumber \\
\text{Every Kulaybī's countenance is more subservient to men's feet than shoes,}\nonumber \\
\text{Every Kulaybī who drives his she-ass, has a purpose whereby she is cruppered.}\nonumber 
\end{align*}
\]

Yet he was no real match for Jarīr. The injury that Jarīr had inflicted on the honour of Muŷashi\' and their womenfolk

---

1. Ibid.
2. Ibn-Sall., 326.
3. He was listed at the top of the second class of Islamic poets by Ibn-Sallām, 1451.
5. Ibid.; Nag., 157.
was by far more enduring, and al-Ba‘ith himself indicated
his inability to withstand his assaults when he hinted that
al-Farazdaq, who was a Mujāshi‘ī like himself, ought to come
to his rescue:-

I swear by my life if al-Farazdaq has been distracted
by his shackles and the case of Nawar with its
ointments and perfumes,
Then certainly the enemies of Mujāshi‘ī would stir up
within me the spiritedness of one who is neither
inferior nor debased. [24]

His allusion to al-Farazdaq’s fetter refers, on the one
hand, to the eccentricity of this latter poet and his
ambivalent attitude to the challenges of his time, and on the
other hand, to those challenges that caused him to shackle
himself and announce that he was under a solemn vow to
compose no more satires until he had learnt the Qur‘ān by
heart. [2]

His poetry gave the impression that he had
undergone a temporary transformation when he said:-

For thirty years never have I seen an error that
flashed without setting off towards it. [25]

It is, however, easy to demonstrate that the period of
relative restraint which culminated in the pious act of
shackling himself with a view to learning the Qur‘ān really
corresponded with the governorship of ‘Ubaydallāh ibn-Ziyād
who was able to distract for a while the attention of the
various Banī groups by his mild but effective conciliatory
measures. It is reported that the poet went to Mecca on
pilgrimage and made his vow there:

1. Ibn-Sall., 327.
below.
Don't you see that I made a pledge with my Lord while standing between the gate and the shrine, 
And swore never to slander a Muslim or allow offensive words to issue from my mouth? 
Don't you see that inviolable barriers on account of Islam have stood between me and poetry?[26]¹

The fact that his repentance was terminated as soon as tribal animosities flared up after the death of Yazīd I underlines the turn of the tide which poets like himself could not easily resist. It is reported that the women of Mujāshī' became infuriated when they heard of Jarīr's calumnies against them and approached al-Farazdaq saying, "May God render your shackle hideous! Jarīr has violated the honour of your women, may you be cursed as a people's poet."² Thus public opinion obliged him to intervene in defence of his tribal honour. He exposed his sentiments very powerfully when he broke loose from his fetters and announced:

Hunayda scoffed at me when she saw [me] a prisoner with his steps shortened by the links of his shackle, 
Had she known that the strongest bond is [that] which leads to hell, she would have addressed me more wisely, 
I swear by my life, having now shackled myself, how long have I run and given free rein to ignorance, 
For thirty years never have I seen an error that flashed without setting off towards it, 
Yet although my shackle has been the result of a vow I have made, no consideration whatsoever would stand between me and the defence of my people's honour, 
I am their guarantor, the patron over them, and it is only me or somebody like me who would defend the like of them.[27]³

Although at the time he carefully abstained from mentioning Jarīr by name and from insulting his kinsmen, Kulayb, and

1. Naq., 126.
2. Far., ii, 152.
restricted himself to vindicating the honour of Mujāshi', and even assailed al-Ba'ith, as we shall see presently, Jarīr's attitude made it impossible for him to maintain a purely defensive stand, and in the controversy which ensued each of the two poets strove to outdo the other in virulence.¹

Thus the two major Tamīmī poets were brought into the arena at a time when the internal situation in Baṣra was at its worst as far as tribal relations were concerned. If the assertion of Ibn-Sallām² that their feud persisted for about 40 years is accepted as a rough estimate, and since they both died some time in 110/728 it can be assumed that their encounters started sometime prior to the death of Yazīd I in 64/683. There is sufficient evidence to indicate that the poetic feud which had been raging earlier in the desert had shifted to the town proper, especially through the implication of al-Farazdaq who was resident at the time in Baṣra. It is reported that the Banū-Yarbu' of Baṣra sent word to Jarīr complaining, "You are resident in al-Marrūt (in the bādiya) and you have no one to transmit your poetry while al-Farazdaq has filled the whole of Iraq with poetry against you for over seven years," so he came down and settled in Baṣra.³

Thus the two poets made Baṣra the stage of their activities which assumed such proportions during the governorship of al-Qubā' (65-7/684-686) that he had to order their

---

2. Tabaqāt, 329.
3. Ibn-Qut., Sh., 1, 349.
houses to be dismantled and them to be expelled from Basra. This drastic measure by al-Qubā', who was otherwise reputed for leniency and indecision must have been prompted by the ill effects which their activities were beginning to have on the internal situation, involving even those responsible for security. It is asserted that 'Abbād ibn-al-Ḥuṣayn al-Ḥabāṭī of Tamīm who was the security officer of al-Qubā' sided with Jarīr against al-Farazdaq by lending the former a horse and a coat of arms in a famous poetic encounter between the two poets in al-Ḥirbad. The incident is related by al-Farazdaq when he said:

Do you think my heart will leap out of place when the bells of 'Abbād's tambourine sound? Is it on account of a lousy creature of Kulayb whom I lampooned, that Abu-Jahām (i.e. 'Abbad) is boiling against me? O Ḥarīth (i.e. al-Qubā')! You have dismantled my residence twice, and you used to be a cousin who was not feared for mischief.

The grievance of 'Abbād against al-Farazdaq went back to an earlier date when al-Farazdaq was reported to have said:

The Banū-Dārīm have their equals among the family of Misma', while the Ḥabaṭāt should seek marriage among those who befit them,

indicating thereby that the Ḥabaṭāt to whom 'Abbād belonged were of an inferior social status compared with the Banū-Dārīm

1. Ansāb, v, 278.
4. Ibid., 606-8; Far., ii, 172.
5. They were the leading family of Bakr ibn-Wā'il, Mub., Kāmil, i, 213.
6. They were a branch of Tamīm.
of Tamīm, the people of al-Farazdaq and were therefore also inferior to the Mismā' family. Thus ‘Abbād naturally favoured Jarīr, although he was later forced by the governor to sack the houses of both poets. Jarīr was more blunt when he told al-Ḥarīth [al-Qubā'] on the occasion:—

O Ḥarīth, choose whom you like of their men and of ours and allow us to vie in glory the merits of which are reckoned.
There is nothing in the Book of God to allow the dismantling of our residence in retaliation for dismantling a brothel, evil of entrance.[30]

Poetic interchanges sometimes led to violence and bloodshed. Abū-'Ubayda related that "when the two poets met in Mirbad to exchange lampoons the Banū-Yarbu' and the Banū-Mujāshi' came to blows, and the Banū-‘l-‘Amm of Tamīm reinforced Mujāshi' and rushed to their help carrying staves of wood and succeeded in driving the Yarbu'īs away, which prompted Jarīr to say:—

Al-Farazdaq has no defence to turn to except the Banū-‘l-‘Amm with wooden staves in their hands.
O Banū-‘l-‘Amm march away, for al-Ahwaz is your abode together with the river Tīrā, and you are unknown to the Arabs.[31]

The upshot of the episode was that al-Farazdaq managed to escape while Jarīr and an-Nawār, al-Farazdaq's wife were taken prisoners.4 Looking back on his rebellious past al-Farazdaq told al-Qubā' defiantly:—

Before you had I exhausted Ziyād, the one who contracted his eye, so that his traps failed to catch me,
And I have sworn not to go back to him for seventy years, even though the eye and back of al-Qubā' were stricken with disease.[32]

1. Meaning the residence of his adversary.
2. Nag., 683.
3. Agh., iii, 76.
4. Nag., 166.
5. Ibid., 607-8; Far., ii, 172.
4. The age of Jarīr and al-Farazdaq:

The clash between Jarīr and al-Farazdaq was the climax of a process which had been gaining momentum for some time and involving an increasing number of poets. But out of hundreds of their contemporaries the two contending poets emerged as the undisputed giants who continued to dominate the scene until their death and after. Their poetry reflected in many ways the formative tendencies of their time. They represented between them the whole breadth of the Baṣrī scene in all its complexity for more than half a century.

Their relation to each other and to other poets and groups may be taken as a fairly true reflection of the dominant currents of Baṣrī society at the time. In the first place they reflected tribal rivalry in almost all its manifestations, the local as well as the general. Belonging to two different clans of Tamīm their poetry depicted in no equivocal terms the intense rivalry that often existed between the minor tribal divisions which, on certain occasions and especially at times of crisis, found it more convenient to array themselves under the banner of a larger tribal grouping. Thus while the two poets, typifying scores of their contemporaries, were at each other's throat in defending their respective clans, they both and at the same time concurred in defending the larger group of Tamīm and each of them boasted of being its accredited mouthpiece. Furthermore, when political considerations called for further
agglomeration which resulted in the dichotomies of Khindif (mainly Tamīm) versus Qays, and then of a combination of both (under the name of Muğar) versus Rabīʿa, and then of the combination of the three (under the name of Nizārīs or ʿAdnānīs) versus the Yemen, they reflected the shifting pattern of these alliances. In addition to indicating the formal side of tribal activity whether in the relations of tribes to each other or to the Umayyad government, they also reflected very strongly the ordinary personal relations that had existed between individual tribesmen in their community.

To indicate in broad outline the major features of this tribal poetry which attained its peak in the works of the two Tamīmī poets and their contemporaries, it is possible to divide it into manageable categories and accordingly treat it under two headings of rivalry within the same tribe, and the tribe against other tribes and larger tribal groupings.

5. Rivalry within the same tribe:

Reference has already been made to various encounters between some of the Tamīmī poets which echoed in various ways the differences existing for some reason or other between the various branches of Tamīm. There is no reason to doubt that the majority of other tribes were in a similar position. The records of Tamīm, however, as preserved by the works of their various poets and other literary works especially the "Naqāʿiq of Jarīr and al-Farazdaq" of Abū-ʿUbayda are more

1. cf. Chapter 1, Pattern of tribal alliance, p.11, 21.  
2. cf. Pellat, Milieu, 156-158; E.I. 2, "Djarīr", "al-Farazdaq".
comprehensive than those of any other tribe. The larger number of their poets and the excellence of their verse helped more than any other consideration to perpetuate their memory in literary annals. The tribe provides a good example of how extensive the dimensions of tribal rivalry could be. ‘Aṣabiyya sometimes narrowed until it flared up within the same clan or family group as in the case of al-Ubayrid and his cousin al-ʿAḥwaṣ who assailed Suḥaym ibn-Wathīl who belonged, like themselves to Banū-Riyāḥ of Tamīm. The poetic feud between Ḥarītha ibn-Badr and the Banū-Salīṭ, who all belonged to Banū-Yarbu' of Tamīm gives another example. The encounter between al-Farazdaq and al-BaʿĪth, alluded to earlier is a case in point. While both of them defended the common clan of Wujūshi' to which they belonged against Kulayb each satirized the inner family group of the other. Thus in coming to the help of al-BaʿĪth against Jarīr, al-Farazdaq satirized both in his words:—

Certainly the Jarīr of baseness wished that he had been a captive and had never come nearer to the roaring of ferocious lions,
The son of the red-bottomed slave-girl would never get away from me since he has failed to chide away the birds of bad omen,
Surely both of you have incited me against yourselves,
so do not panic and lend your ears to foul speech.[33]

Throughout al-Farazdaq's early satires against Jarīr, al-BaʿĪth received his quota of abuse as well.

1. cf. Ḫub., Kāmil (ed. Marṣafī), iii, 36; Agh., xii, 14.
2. cf. Agh., xxi, 22.
3. ʿHamrāʾ al-ʿIjān (i.e. the one with red perineum) indicated either her Persian origin or her menial occupation. “Ibn ʿHamrāʾ al-ʿIjān” continued to be the nickname of BaʿĪth.
This latter episode indicates the dilemma that sometimes faced some poets who found themselves in the intricate situation of having to lampoon another poet or individual who was closely related to them by blood. Al-Farazdaq, when the short-lived encounter between him and the poet Miskín ad-Darímí arising from the latter's elegy on Ziyád ibn-Abíhi had come to an end, heaved a deep sigh of relief and said, "I narrowly escaped being satirized by Miskín, for if I answered him I would do away with half my glory, or else if I held back it would be a blemish on me for all time."¹ To avoid implicating the whole group the poet usually reacted by singling out the person in question and by representing him as being of an alien origin which had nothing in common with the tribal group. This tendency is reflected most strongly among the poets of Tamím. Thus al-Farazdaq grounded his main charges against al-Ba‘íth in his base descent since his mother was claimed to have been a Sijístání slave-girl.² He called him in addition to "ibn ḥamrá‘ al-‘iján" noted earlier, "ibn al-ḥabítha³ (son of mischievous woman). He even denied him the honour of being a member of Tamím when he told him:

You are not from us but, you claim a genealogy in the family of Qurt,⁴ having been a captive.⁵

Al-Ba‘íth in turn had to rebut the slanders of his adversary and attack him and his family by exposing their past belmishes

¹. Agh., xix, 32.
². Ibn-Sall., 326.
³. Nag., 125; cf. 169, 170; Far., ii, 152-3; 268.
⁵. Nag., 623.
and mean origin. He denied them, as did Jarīr after him, any relation to pure Tamīmi origin and capitalized on the claim that they were the offspring of a Yemenī slave:

You feigned sleeping when Aʿyan called on you O sons of female slaves from the Yemenī slave.[35]

Jarīr in addition to dwelling on the same idea of "quyun" (slaves) in his references to al-Farazdaq and his group described their ancestor as "ʿilj" (foreigner) when he said,

al-Farazdaq and all the šaʿāṣiʿ whose faces are like frying-pans [in blackness] are the progeny of a foreigner.[36]

He represented, as indicated earlier, the Banū-ʾl-ʿAmm of Tamīm as being of an alien origin unknown to the Arabs and in a like manner disclaimed the relationship of their sub-tribe of ‘Arīn when one of their members threatened to kill him for satirizing ṣalīt and told them:

‘Arīn are from ʿUrayna, they are not from us; I free myself to ʿUrayna from ‘Arīn,
They are born slaves of ‘Abd-al-Qays, [offspring] of newly acquired and resident slaves,
We recognize Jaʿfar and the Banū-ʿUbayd, but we disown other promiscuous parties.[37]

Likewise al-Farazdaq called Jarīr and his family "ʿabīd" (slaves) when he addressed his adversary:

The son of the she-ass6 claims his genealogy in Darīm, but then the slave can easily claim someone else for his father,
Noble men will never allow you to claim their father until you are drawn forcibly and returned to ‘Atīyya[38]

1. Aʿyan ibn-Ḍubayʿa of Ḥujāshiʿ, father of an-Nawār the wife of Farazdaq, slain at Basra soon after the Battle of the Camel; cf. Ṭab., i, 3200.
4. A Yemeni tribe.
6. cf. P.139, below.
But despite this loophole poets were always wary of assailing their own `ashīra as indicated by even al-Farazdaq when he said concerning Banū-Jārīm of Dabba, his maternal uncles:

Had it not been for the Banū-Saʿd of Dabba, the Banū-Jārīm would have been placed through me on the back of a scabby camel, I have always refrained from slandering the `ashīra, but if people invite evil in a hurry it hastens [to them] [39]

Despite the profusion of these feuds none had been more ferocious than the encounter between Jarīr and al-Farazdaq. It has already been mentioned that with the implication of the latter poet in the feud that had been raging between the former and al- Başṭīth the nature and scope of the feud attained new dimensions. In addition to the usual abuse a more sober note of glorifying the poet's group steadily increased. This process reached its highest peak shortly before the outbreak of hostilities following the death of Yazīd I so that the rivalry between the two poets not only reflected the attitudes of their respective clans but also embraced a good deal more as we shall see presently. We shall confine ourselves here, for the time being, to the one aspect of their rivalry dealing with their sub-clans of Mujāshi' and Kulayb.

After giving due consideration to personal elements which confound relations in any human society, it must be emphasized that the underlying motive for this feud, as well

1. Far., ii, 114.
2. In addition to the encounters of Jarīr and al-Farazdaq with other poets mentioned earlier, cf. ibn-Qut., Sh., ii, 667; Nac., 124 for the encounter of Farazdaq with Murra ibn-Mahkan.
3. cf. P.129 above.
as for most of the others, was the consciousness of those involved that they stood to gain by such activities. The fact that in most of their not very distant past most of these clans acted independently and at times against their own related groups in order to further their own ends—a course which could be profitably repeated in the new circumstances with similar results—is attested by the indulgence of poets in recounting the victories of their respective clans against the others in the *Jahiliyya* and in Islam. The diligence with which these 'days' of the Arabs were recorded in their poetry furnished historians with copious, if not always accurate, material for their study of pre-Islamic Arabia. This material which subsequent generations regarded as merely of historical interest had been a lively issue in the engagements between the parties concerned. The emphasis on glory and freedom from blemish led as pointed out earlier to invention and other petty practices. The vices and faults of opponents were traced and projected in the most grotesque fashion, so that 'Abū-'Ubayda could say of Jarīr and al-Parazdaq, "How evil were the two *shaykhs*! Actually God has never created more inauspicious creatures for their people than them; they exposed the vices and pitfalls of Tamīm and they were at the same time most knowledgeable of other people's defects." The obscene framework

1. cf. p. 78 above.
2. e.g. the Banū-Yarbu' received a bribe from Banū-Shaybān of Bakr and allowed them to attack the Banū-Se'd of Tamīm, *Nag.*, 144-5, 326.
3. cf. *'Umda*, ii, 198-225; *'Iqd*, vi, 3-111.
in which a considerable proportion of this material was
couched rendered the compositions more endearing to the
listening crowds,¹ for most of this poetry had been made
with the audience in mind. Thus Jarîr relished levelling
charges at the womenfolk of Mujâshi² and especially the
household of al-Farazdaq. The affair of Ji'thin, al-
Farazdaq's sister, and the extent to which he exploited it
may be appreciated by a glance at the index of the Naqâ'id.³
He reviled Farazdaq's wife an-Nawâr⁴ and even claimed that
she had an affair with him when they had been both
imprisoned by al-Qubā'.⁵ He accused his adversary's
grandmother Layla of having been impregnated by Jubayr, a
slave black-smith⁶ and hence the insistence on calling them
guyûn as noted earlier.

Similarly al-Farazdaq attacked Umm-Ghaylan, Jarîr's
daughter,⁷ and his mother whom he called al-marâgha (she-
ass), an epithet used earlier by Ghassân⁸ and accused her of
adultery.⁹ He accused his adversary of incest¹⁰ and

---

1. cf. p. 96 above.
2. cf. Naq., 82-3, 226, 230-1, 274, 321, 322, 340-1, 439-441,
   857-8, 863-4 etc.
3. e.g. 222, 251, 398, 440, 482-3, 592-3, 682, 709, 778, 800,
   845, 855-6, 978-980, 1001.
4. cf. Ibid., 341;
5. cf. P. 131 above.
7. Ibid., 841-3.
8. Ibid., 17.
9. Ibid., 205.
10. Ibid., 210.
drenched the Kulaybī women with abuse. In addition he attacked the obvious poverty of Kulayb and represented their women as slaves and herdswomen, a great humiliation among Arabs for tending camels was usually a man's job. He further underlined their inferior status by describing them as owners of sheep and asses who paid the dowry of their women in rams (instead of camels) and performed their racing competitions on asses (instead of horses). He further accused them of having illicit relations with their she-asses and of taking them as wives, a charge which so infuriated some of the Kulaybīs that they would have forced the poet once, when passing through their quarter, to copulate with a she-ass, and only his sharp wit spared him the debasing experience.

It suffices to mention here that the two poets used all the means at their disposal to achieve their ends. No effort was spared to enumerate the merits of one's people and the defects of the other party and to invoke all the forces they could muster. Thus in addition to boasting of Tamīm as a whole, a subject to which we shall turn presently, the poets increasingly and especially after the Zubayrī
interlude indulged in praising all the related clans of Tamīm they could claim as being on their side. Al-Farazdaq dwelt on the merits of the various Dārimī clans, notwithstanding that he had satirized some of them earlier. In one poem he boasted of Mujāshi’, Nahshal, Fugaym, Banū-Ṭuhaiyya, the Rabā’i’, Banū-‘l-‘Adawiyya, Barājim, Ḥanẓala and Ḍabba while Jarīr, after declaring his victory over Mujāshi’ boasted of his lofty place at the top of the 'two mountains of Tamīm' (‘Amr and Mālik). This awareness of a wider circle which ultimately encompassed the whole of Tamīm sometimes acted as a brake on poets' indulgence and forced them to restrict the scope of their satire. It is perhaps the fear of 'escalation' that prompted Jarīr to frustrate the attempt of al-Ba‘īth and afterwards of al-Farazdaq to represent the feud between them as though it had been between the Banū-Mālik and the Banū-Yarbu’, the major branches of Tamīm to which their respective clans belonged. He rebuffed al-Ba‘īth by telling him:—

Would you reproach Yarbu’ so that I might slander Mālik, while someone other than yourself is the patron of Mālik and [is] of their pure stock?\[40\]

He further boasted of belonging to Mālik in the same manner as did al-Ba‘īth when he boasted of his position among them and said:

4. Ibid., 143.
I have the credit among the tribal groups of 'Amr and Malik.[41]

In order to cut the grass from under the feet of his Mujāshi'ī opponents he often instigated the Banū-Mālik against Mujāshi'ī as in his verse:

O Banū-Mālik there is no truthfulness among Mujāshi'ī, but only a share of vain boasting [mixed with] deceit.[42]

The feud displayed the impact of tribal rivalry in the town as a whole in another way. A marked tendency to boast of the military glory of the sub-tribe and to enumerate its victories not only against the rival sub-tribe which had been the usual practice earlier, but against other tribal groups is discernible especially after the death of Yazīd. Thus Jarīr in satirizing al-Ba'īth did not stop at castigating Mujāshi'ī but also dwelt on the victories of his own branch of Kulayb against Shaybān and Bakr and other tribes. Al-Ba'īth himself managed to burst the narrow tribal boundaries and explored wider horizons when he replied to Jarīr, indicating the power of Mujāshi'ī:

Of all Ma‘add we have requited the debts, paying [them] misfortune for adversity and favour for favour.[43]

At this juncture a new element is introduced demonstrating the increasing power of Quraysh to which the Umayyads belonged. Thus Jarīr in rebutting the arguments of al-Parazdaq said:

Then go back to the two judges of Quraysh[5] for they are the possessors of prophethood and the revealed Book.[44]

1. Ibid., 162.
3. Ibid., 66-77.
4. Ibid.
5. i.e. 'Abd-Shams (Umayya) and Hāshim.
making Quraysh the arbiters in addition to Mu'ādh and Rabī'ā,\(^1\) while al-Farazdaq would regard Quraysh the only tribe which could compete with them in glory:—

There is no Ma'addī whom we can reckon as equal to us except the two families of 'Abd-shams and Hashim.[45]\(^2\)

Although the share of Tamīm was overwhelmingly large in this connection, as has been pointed out earlier,\(^3\) they were not unique and in all probability the attitude of other tribes, though not as fully documented, was not far removed from that of Tamīm judging by the case of al-'Udayl ibn-al-Farkh, the poet of Bakr ibn-Wā'il whose quarrel with his cousins concerning the marriage of their sister ended in a blood-feud.\(^4\)

6. The tribe against other tribes and larger groups:

The tendency of smaller groups to join their related branches to form larger groups such as Tamīm, Qays, Azd, Bakr, 'Abd-al-Qays and others upon which the division of the town into akhmas had been based\(^5\) loomed large in the experiences of poets and inspired a considerable portion of their compositions. Despite the fact that a large part of this poetry dwelt at great length on the distinctive merits of the respective clans, indicating thereby their powerful hold on poets' minds, it nevertheless steadily portrayed, and at times concurrently, the glories of the larger group. But

---

1. Ibid., 225; cf. ibid., 763-4.
3. cf. P.133 above.
5. cf. Chapter 1, pp.11-17, 30 above.
it is important to point out that although this feeling of belonging to a larger group had always been a reality in Baṣra as the events of the Battle of the Camel indicated, it was rarely emphasized, at least in poetry, except in times of crisis or hostility with other larger groups especially after the death of Yazīd I. It is not amiss here to anticipate a forthcoming point and mention that it was the relative weakness of this feeling which prompted Jarīr, under certain conditions, to be the spokesman of Qays-'Aylan who had been in many cases the enemies of his own tribe of Tamīn. A chronological survey of some of the available poetry would show the rising graph of this tendency. Thus if we take the case of Tamīn as an example we notice the scarcity of references to Tamīn as such in the early compositions especially those concerned with the feuds between the various clans. But as the importance of Tamīn as a 'power' in the politico-tribal framework increased, the corresponding note in poetry steadily grew stronger. This tendency is evident even in the poetry extolling the merits of the minor clan. In condemning the rival clans poets did not hesitate to praise Tamīn and to boast of belonging to it. Thus in listing the merits of his clan Jarīr told al-Baʿith:-

And on the day of 'Ubaydallāh we waded [through the battlefield] with banners [in] a regiment encompassing the whole of Tamīn.[46]

Al-Ba'ith made a similar claim in another piece against Jarīr:-

You found us defending Tamīm who, horsemen and foot-soldiers alike, trace back their origins to us.\[^{47}\]\(^1\)

This sentiment sometimes overshadowed the original feud as the words of Jarīr concerning al-Ba'īth and al-Farazdaq during the governorship of al-Qubā' would suggest:-

Some men of Tamīm desired my death, whereas none has defended their glory as I have done.  
As though they know not where I hail from, and yet they know that I am the invincible forerunner.\[^{48}\]\(^2\)

This awareness of the larger group was heightened by the intensity of tribal confrontation in the town. Thus the burning of Ibn-al-Ḥaqrāmī in 38/659\[^3\] which had been performed by a section of Tamīm was represented by al-'Arandas of Azd as a disgrace embracing the whole of Tamīm, while the glory of protecting Ziyād was represented as being to the credit of the Azd.\[^4\]

The internal crisis following the death of Yazīd I was the most important factor in sharpening tribal divisions. The high-handedness of Tamīm in forcing the pace of tribal rivalry is indicated by the lines of Ḥarīthah ibn-Badr of Tamīm\[^5\] when his tribe took a decisive part in appointing ‘Abdallāh ibn-Ḥarīth (Babba) as governor of Baṣra,\[^6\] probably against the will of Azd, Bakr and ‘Abd-al-Qays\[^7\] who were forced to join forces against the combined forces of Muḍar.\[^8\]

---

1. Ibid., 143.  
2. Ibid., 161.  
3. cf. Chapter I, p.15.  
5. cf. Chapter V, verse No.210, pp. 226 below.  
6. cf. Tab., ii, 444; cf. also Chapter 1, 18.  
8. cf. Chapter 1, 19.
groups were depicted vividly by Ḥarītha when he told al-
Aḥnaf ibn-Qays:-

'Abs, the member of Kahmas, will relieve you of
fighting the Azd at Mirbad,
While [the sub-tribe of] 'Amr and its followers will
be charged with meeting Lukayz ibn-Afṣa and their
planning,
As for me I shall be a sufficient [counterpart] for Bakr
piercing them when they advance with [lances] the
thrusts [of which] turn grey the hair of beardless
youth.[49]

The result of the struggle was the murder of the Azdī leader
Mas'ūd ibn-'Amr al-'Atakī. The incident was viewed in the
general context of tribal alliances as the lines of 'Arham
ibn-Qays would suggest:-

When Mas'ūd ibn-'Amr came to us we caused the sharp
blade of a whetted sword to visit him in the morning,
Mas'ūd desired to be an emir but he was left prostrate -
we have made him taste death,
Our multitudes will be gathered to [meet] the sons of
our father (i.e. Rabia') like coupling two horses
[in a race],
The Zuṭṭ will deal with 'Abd-al-Qays for us, while the
Asawira will be a sufficient foil on our behalf for
the Mazun (i.e. Azd).[50]

The bond between Qays and Tamīm who joined forces as Muḍar
was mentioned by Sawwār ibn-Ḥayyān al-Winqārī when he said:-

Were there not admonitions in the murder of Mas'ūd?
He came seeking the post of emir but failed to
achieve it,
Until we struck his head and he fell, no pillow being
placed beneath his cheek where it was soiled with
dust,
Thus the Mazunī slave had tripped to the extent that he
saw death coming at close quarters,
They were overwhelmed by the sea of Tamīm when it ran
high, and that of Qays-'Aylan which burst out
Around them so that they failed to find a way of escape
until the torrent overtopped and swallowed them
up.[51]

1. Agh., xxi, 29; Mub., Kamil, ii, 126.
2. Naq., 115; cf. Tab., ii, 456 where the name is given as
   Jurhum.
3. Ibid.; cf. Pellat, Milieu, 32n. 7 for Mazun.
Political considerations confirmed and accentuated these divisions. The Mudarī group, especially Qays\(^1\) and most of Tamīm\(^2\) were pro-Zubayrid and anti-Umayyad. These tribal divisions were the predominant features in the Battle of Jufra.\(^3\) When Ḥusayn defeated Ibn-Asid, Abū-Nukhayla, speaking on behalf of his people Tamīm said:—

> We have struck the Azd in Iraq together with the rebellious tribe of Rabī‘a,
> And the son of Asid, the leader of hypocrites, without pensions or allowances,
> [Relying on nothing] but [our sense of duty to defend]
> what remained of noble origins, [goaded] by intense fear and anxiety [to avoid] disgrace and lasting shame.[52]\(^4\)

Events in Khurāsān cast their dark shadow on the Miṣr and precipitated the division of the Mudarī camp.\(^5\) The murder of the Qaysī Ibn-Khāzim by Tamīm in 74/693 started the cleavage. The activities of Bishr ibn-Marwān, whose mother was a Qaysite, and of al-Ḥajjāj\(^6\) were decisive factors in promoting the fortunes of Qays. It appears that they persuaded Jarīr to sing their praise and to act as the spokesman of Qays, a task which he actively carried out since his maternal uncles were also from Qays.\(^7\) The strong rule of al-Ḥajjāj, however, ensured a period of tribal peace extending for 20 years. Once he died rivalries started afresh and the split between Qays and Tamīm reached its

---

1. Ansāb, v, 314, 319; Ibn-Sall., 437.
2. cf. Chapter IV, verse No. 54, p. 150
3. cf. Chapter I, 20-21
5. cf. Chapter I, 19.
6. cf. Chapter I, 23.
climax when the latter murdered the Qaysī governor of Khurāsān, Qutayba.¹ From now onwards tribal relations were firmly geared to Umayyad politics, and poets - as we shall see in the following Chapter² - depicted the shifting pattern of tribal alliances within the general framework of Umayyad politics.

---

¹ cf. Chapter I, 24.
CHAPTER IV

POETRY AND THE STATE

i. POETS AND THE CALIPHATE

The general attitude of Basra to politics was captured at an early stage by the mother of the famous Basri judge, Ka'b ibn-Sur the Azdite¹ who had been killed with three or four of his brothers in the Battle of the Camel with a copy of the Qur'ān tied round his neck.² She stood over their dead bodies uttering the brief lamentation:—

0 eye of mine! Let your tears flow liberally over youths [who were] of the best of Arabs, Whose portion was none but loss of life whichever of the two emirs of Quraysh had triumphed.[53]³

But despite this indifference arising in the main from the preoccupation of Basris with their endemic tribal strife which often cut them adrift from the main current of Umayyad politics,⁴ the general picture provided by Basri poetry is one of acquiescence in the religious basis of the caliphate and the acceptance of Quraysh's right to it. Our records of the early days are meagre; thus the rivalry between Mu'awiya and 'Ali and the eventual triumph of the former left little trace⁵ in extant poetry. The deficiency of poetic production in this connection may be attributed

3. Ibid., 153.
5. cf. Dīwan of Abu-’l-Aswad, who was a Shi‘I, pp.174-179.
in part to the lack of enthusiasm on the part of the majority of Başrīs who were reluctant to commit themselves wholeheartedly to either side.¹ When that commitment was forthcoming the picture became different. The consequences of the decision of the Muqarrārī element in Başra, with Tamīm at their head, to support the Zubayrids against the Marwānids, following the death of Yazīd I in 64/683, were momentous in the spheres of politics and poetry. The Umayyad cause suffered in consequence a considerable setback and the majority of poets were decidedly anti-Umayyad, an attitude which later prompted the caliph 'Abd-al-Malik (65-86/685-705) to refuse admission to his court to all Muqarrārī poets because of their pro-Zubayrid leanings.² The predominant sentiment of Tamīm at the time was expressed by al-Farazdaq when he addressed some of the Tamīmīs who had joined the Marwānids at the Battle of al-Jufra:³

I marvel at some men, their ancestor being Tamīm, who occupy high-ranking positions among the Banū-Saʿd, They had been chieftains of their people before joining forces with the yellow-bearded Azdīs and Mālik, Whereas it was we who expelled Mālik from our homeland And pierced his eye with shooting lances; How do you think Muṣʿab, the son of the Prophet's companion, [will treat you] when he shows his canine teeth, not laughing?[54]⁴

But the Bakrīs of whom the above mentioned Mālik was a leader were not all anti-Zubayrid. Suwayd ibn-Manjūf as-Sadūsī,

¹. cf. P. 152 below.
². Ibn-Sall., 357.
³. cf. Chapter I, p. 20; Tab., ii, 799-800; Naq., 750-752.
⁴. Par., ii, 57; Tab., ii, 800-801; Naq., 752.
one of their leaders warned Mus’ab ibn-az-Zubayr against the treachery of those around him when he said:-

Now convey a message from me to Mus’ab - and sincere advisers are not to be found in every valley - [Telling him]: Know that most of those you take as confidants are the real enemies however close you draw them to you.\[^{55}\]

It is noticeable that during this chaotic period some poets, sensing the weakening effect of the rift between the two Qurashi factions, found courage to criticise Quraysh openly. Thus when ‘Abdallāh ibn-az-Zubayr abused al-Farazdaq and told him, "You and your people are nothing but the emigrants of Arabs", \[^{3}\] the poet said:-

However angry Quraysh might be, or feign to be,
Tamim would engulf the earth,
They equal the stars in number whereas no other tribe has stars [to be] counted,
Had it not been for the temple of Mecca, you would not have settled [therein], it is there that roots and origins become sound,
It was there that your numbers multiplied and you achieved excellence, while other people were being taken captives, reduced to unquenchable thirst,
So go softly in adducing excuses for deceiving the one you have betrayed and who had been tormented by [his] closest associate,
O ‘Abdallāh! Be wary in [your efforts] to harm me for I am neither a weakling nor the one who readily desists.\[^{56}\]^-

But this open criticism did not always go unchallenged from other Baqris. When Abū-Ḥuzaba criticised the Qurashi governor of Sijistān in al-Mirbad saying:-

\[^{1}\] cf. Ibn-Sall., 401, 402; \[^{2}\] Ansāb, v, 171.
\[^{3}\] Ansāb, v, 343.
\[^{4}\] Agh., xix, 10.
\[^{5}\] Ibid., 10-11.
So reject the whole of Quraysh because of that one [amongst them] who is afflicted with chronic disease,[57]

another Tamīmī dignitary, ‘Awn ibn-‘Abd-ar-Rahmān interrupted him exclaiming, "What! Would you dare to slander Quraysh in public?" The poet had to defend himself by pointing out that his slander was not indiscriminate, for he had singled out only one Qurashi, but the other Tamīmī threatened and eventually did him some mischief, for which the poet retaliated later by castigating him bitterly.²

The Zubayrids, however, do not feature prominently in poetry. With the exception of a few scattered lines³ there is virtually no Basrī poetry defending them or expounding their policies, and the assumption is that whatever poetry had been composed in this connection was later suppressed either by the poets themselves or by the Umayyads or by both.

With the triumph of Marwānids and their assumption of the caliphate the tables were turned against the Zubayrids. Subsequently poetry, especially that of the major poets, came increasingly to reflect the general policies of successive caliphs and their governors, extolling their merits. Already, immediately following the murder of Muṣʿab (72/691), al-Baʿīth of Yashkur had set the tone when he said:-

1. Ibid., 155.
3. cf. ibid., xvii, 65 where Ibn-Mufarrigh praised Ibn-az-Zubayr; Diwan of ‘Ajja, p.3. where he praised Muṣʿab.
When we realised that things had become inverted, that those in the forefront were about to be relegated to the rear, we waited for the command of God to be fully unfolded, accepting none but one from Umayyads as a ruler, and it was we who killed Muṣ'ab, and the son of Muṣ'ab - that member of the tribe of Asad - as well as the Yemeni, the Nakha‘ī. [58]

The Umayyads, having won on the battlefield, lost no time in trying to win people's hearts and minds. Concerted efforts were made to exploit religious susceptibilities. The caliphate and the religious paraphernalia attached to it were used extensively to represent the Umayyad occupants as the protectors of Islam, while their political opponents were represented as acting against Islam. The correlation between the content of Baṣrī poetry reflecting this aspect of political life and Umayyad declarations of policy is significant. We can easily see in the religious element which predominates in most of this species of poetry the main outlines of policy especially as propounded earliest by al-Ḥajjāj (75–95/695–714) and 'Abd-al-Walik. Al-Ḥajjāj is said to have held the view that obedience to the caliph and to his agents is obligatory on men by divine sanction.² His words are reported to have been, "By God, obedience to me is more binding [upon men] than obedience to God. For God says, 'Fear God to the best of your ability' allowing some leeway. But when he says, 'listen and obey' he makes no allowance. If I order a

1. Ṭab., ii, 810.
2. Ibn-Ḥajar, Tahdhib, ii, 210-211.
3. Q., lxiv, 16.
4. Ibid.
man to enter through this door and he refuses to enter, his blood is lawful to me." The governor is further credited with having held the view that the caliph was superior to angels, prophets and apostles, basing his conviction on the reference made to Adam when God had made him a vicegerent (khalīfa) on earth, sending angels as messengers to him. He drew from that the basic conclusion that the caliph of God on earth was in greater favour with God than His messenger to men. He used to drive his point home by asking those around him, "Which of the two is more honoured: the one put in trust over one's household, or the one sent as a mere messenger to them?" It is in accordance with such ideas that al-Ḥajjāj subjected the rebels who had joined the abortive revolt of Ibn-al-Ash'ath to the ordeal of having to declare themselves unbelievers by revolting against the caliph, and whoever refused to admit his guilt was put to death. This practice was mentioned by al-Farazdaq after the death of al-Ḥajjāj (95/714) and the accession of the caliph Sulaymūn (96/715) when he said:—

... When whoever failed to declare himself an unbeliever, would be [held] guilty of an unforgivable stumble in daylight, Losing thereby his head by a stroke, swift in removing what rests between the shoulders,

1. Jahiz, Hayawan, iii, 5.
2. Q., ii, 30-35.
3. 'Iqd, v, 332.
4. Ibid., 334.
5. 'Iqd, v, 333.
6. cf. Chapter I, 23.
Even though he had performed his prayers for eighty years, fasted and offered white-muzzled sacrificial animals.[59]¹

The core of al-Ḥajjāj's argument was expressed by Jarīr when he said in his praise:—

> You regard aiding the imām as a duty incumbent upon you when they confuse their faith with doubt.[60]²

All political issues were reduced accordingly to religious ones. The anti-Umayyad stand of Iraq was represented by Jarīr as opposition to faith when he told al-Ḥajjāj:—

> You have come forth to the people of Iraq, some of whom had transgressed the faith of Muslims and had forsaken it.

> So you cured those of them whose hearts religion had failed to cure, and caused the reluctant hypocrite to hasten [with his obedience].[61]³

The Banū-Marwān were consequently portrayed as the bulwark of Islam. Al-Farazdaq told the caliph Sulaymān:—

> We have found the Banū-Marwān [to be] the pegs of our faith, as the earth has its mountains for pegs, And you are, with respect to faith, like the direction-mark by which people are guided when they go astray.[62]⁴

To celebrate their dedication to the defence of Islam the same poet said in his praise of ‘Abd-al-Malik:—

> When the Banū-Marwān encounter [an enemy] they unsheath, in defence of God's religion, angry swords, Sharp ones with which the security of Islam is guaranteed, their blows being directed solely against those spreading doubts.[63]⁶

1. Far., ii, 75;
4. Far., ii, 76; cf. Ibid., i, 89 and Jar., 278.
5. cf. Chapter V where this term is taken, in such contexts to mean the state rather than the faith.
By the same token various terms with religious connotations were lavishly used by poets, especially Jarīr and al-Farazdaq, with reference to the political opponents of the Umayyad regime. The followers of Ibn-az-Zubayr were designated as mulhidūn (heretics)\(^1\), as in the lines of al-Farazdaq in praise of Umayyads:—

With them (i.e. the swords) they encountered at Mecca its deviators together with those at Maskin, and excelled in fighting,

[Their swords] leaving none who used to perform prayer behind a liar without forcing him to turn back [to the right path][64]\(^2\)

In praising ‘Abd-al-Malik, Jarīr addressed Ibn-az-Zubayr in these words:—

You have summoned, O Abū-Khubayb, the deviators, indulging in your own fancy; have you [now] been cured of this indulgence? [65]\(^3\)

In another context al-Farazdaq, castigating Ibn-az-Zubayr, alludes to Musaylima, the arch-liar of Yamāma:—

After the corruption wreaked by the liar of Mecca, with all its craftiness and devastation...[66]\(^4\)

A host of other derogatory terms were employed in describing opponents to make them a scandal in the minds of the believing populace. Definite appellations were used in a systematic manner to suit every category of rebels. The consistency with which poets use such terms betrays some sort of concerted plan designed to brand the group in question with a sinister accusation which would be frequently

---

1. For this term, cf. L. Massignon, La Passion d’al-Ḥajjāj, 1921, p.188; B. Lewis, "Some observations on the significance of heresy in the history of Islam", Studia Islamica, i, p.56.  
2. Far., i, 22; cf. ibid., ii, 15.  
repeated by poets to give it currency, as we have seen in the application of the term 'mulḥids' to the followers of Ibn-az-Zubayr. The opponents of al-Ḥajjāj in Iraq were consistently termed: 'mūnāfīqūn' (hypocrites), as in the line of al-Farazdaq:-

Whenever al-Ḥajjāj fights against any hypocrite he strikes him with a sword that cuts with every sweep.[67]

Jarīr, who was closer to al-Ḥajjāj, dwells at great length on this theme. He once told his patron:-

Whenever you see hypocrites choosing paths of clamorous contention, you resolve every contention, Providing with them the right medicine, and curing them from a rebellion, dust-coloured, smoky and blazing.[68]

Jarīr makes the antithesis of religion and hypocrisy more manifest when he tells al-Ḥajjāj:-

Every hypocrite secretly harbours hatred against you, whereas every religious-minded man feels compassion towards you.[69]

The Iraqi rebels who challenged al-Ḥajjāj are further systematically depicted as 'afārīt and shayṭān (demons).

Jarīr tells al-Ḥajjāj:-

You avenged yourself on the demons of Iraq, reducing them to submission.[70]

In demonstrating the tenacity with which the vicegerent carried out his measures to reduce opponents, al-Farazdaq says:-

Certainly al-Ḥajjāj has struck the blow of a resolute man, causing the Devil's hosts to stumble and suffer humiliation,

1. Ibid., i, 417.
2. Jar., 74, cf. also 74, 96, 316; Far., i, 283.
4. Ibid., 21.
And the country's demons fell down to their knees as though, in their fear of another [blow], they were bound submissively in halters.[71]1

With rebels of a later date unequivocal terms are used. The followers of Qutayba ibn-Muslim who rose against Sulayman ibn-‘Abd-al-Malik in 96/715 are described by al-Farazdaq as downright polytheists (mushrikūn) in his lines:

When we saw the polytheists led by Qutayba, moving slowly among the assembled companies,
We struck with a sword held in your right hand, sparing therewith no eye for a transgressor as far as the gate of China.[72]2

The Yemeni rebels led by the Muhallab family receive the appellations reserved only for non-Muslims. Jarīr in praising Yazīd II, calls them 'kuffār' (unbelievers):

You have left, may we never lose you, for the son of al-Muhallab, when they became unbelievers, a broken bone that cannot be set.[73]3

Al-Ḥajjaq, whose career in Iraq was punctuated with a number of uprisings, is accordingly endowed with all the proper epithets which usually go with this religious conception. In praising ‘Abd-al-Malik, al-Farazdaq says of al-Ḥajjaq:

[It was, i.e. Iraq] a land, being corrupt, upon which you have thrown one of God's sharp and blazing swords,
He never sheathes the sword but to unsheath it [to strike] the nape of a transgressor, [later] crucified in the market-place,
Being a fighter against the enemies of God, seeking reward in combating them relentlessly.[74]4

1. Far., i, 417.
2. Ibid., ii, 312.
3. Jar., 195. The line may also be read as: "when they made obedience to Ibn-al-Muhallab" cf. Lane, S.v., kafar li; for other epithets in this connection cf. Jar., 167, Far., ii, 353; i, 343
Pious attributes are showered upon him as in the lines of the same poet:

Never have I seen an aid to piety, or a seeker after revenge, as al-Ḥajjaj.[75]

He is further represented as being given divine aid.

Al-Farazdaq tells him:

About your person little do you care, a course bringing you nearer to your creator with respect to reward, whoever boasts of having bestowed victory upon you lies, save God who elevates clouds, the sole bestower of grace upon you is a Lord who answers the call of any humble soul.[76]

The analogy with the Battle of Badr, when angels were presumed to have come to the aid of early Muslims, is drawn by Jarīr in his praise of the same governor:

Were it not that your Lord approved he would not have sent down, with victory, the enraged angels.[77]

A parallel is further drawn between him and the Patriarchs, as in the line of Jarīr:

Al-Ḥajjāj has invoked [the curse of God] as Noah did, his voice reaching the master of lofty ascents who answered him.[78]

Having their rulers being represented as divinely-appointed monarchs, people were left no choice but to surrender on pain of damnation in this world and the hereafter. The message is driven home by Jarīr in his lines:

Al-Ḥajjāj has exerted his utmost in the matter of faith, amassing such treasures [of virtue] that no calamity would befall, so obey, otherwise neither will al-Ḥajjāj spare you nor will the two-winged Gabriel be heedless.[79]

1. Ibid., i, 137.
2. Ibid., ii, 81; cf. ii, 138.
4. Ibid., 21; cf. 95 where he is likened to Hūd.
Nor were poets always passive in getting the message across. Rulers were sometimes exhorted to exact penalties on rebels. Al-Farazdaq once advised al-Ḥajjāj:-

Make, may my mother be your ransom, a mark on them, and prohibit them from marrying virtuous wives,

[So that] we may draw a distinction between them and believers when they mingle with the throngs in the fairs,

No other people are more evil than they; you might take them for the like of Turks and Kabul dwellers.[80]¹

It is not amiss to indicate here that rebels of all persuasions, faced with this massive smearing campaign, reacted by employing the same device as their adversaries. The Khārijī groups, who based some of their arguments in this matter on purely religious grounds, were not the only rebels who declared themselves to be the community of believers to the exclusion of all their opponents.² Other rebels with less pretentious claims availed themselves of the same device. Ṭufayl ibn-ʿĀmir ibn-Wāthila, a Baṣrī follower of the rebel ibn-al-Ashʿath said:-

Now convey to al-Ḥajjāj that a smiting chastisement at the hands of believers has drawn nearer to him,

When we alight at the two Misrs, Muḥammad (i.e. Ḥajjāj's brother) will flee, but flight will never rescue the son of the accursed one.[81]³

The position of the caliph as the fulcrum upon which the balance of society rests receives due attention in encomia addressed to individual caliphs. A sizeable portion of this genre dwells on asserting the powers of caliphs and attempts

---

¹. Far., ii, 137-9; cf. Ansāb, ivB, 163 for similar measures taken by Muṣʿab against his adversaries.
². cf. Ḥiqd, i, 84.
³. Ṭab., ii, 1066.
to adduce arguments for their entitlement to the office. The reader of much of this poetry cannot help wondering, whether those poets were not at pains to convince the subjects rather than the patrons praised. Poets were fully aware of the political message they were expected to propagate and, judging by their profuse production in this connection, they missed no opportunity to get that message across. The traditional panegyric in which the individual merits and personal qualities of the patron feature prominently is accordingly transformed, and a genre of political poetry in which propaganda is blended with personal praise is evolved. If the particularity of poetic expression on the part of individual poets is set aside, a systematic pattern of ideas reflecting the general theme of Umayyad policies noted earlier is discernible. The indispensability of the caliph for the spiritual and material well-being of the community is a cardinal concept. Jarīr expressed it in powerful terms in one of his poems on *abd-al-Malik:*

> Were it not for the caliph and the Qurʾān [which] he recites, neither the administration of justice nor the [performance of] communal prayers would have been established for people.[82]

His assumption of office is by divine decree which is unalterable according to Jarīr in his line:—

> God has garlanded you with caliphate and guidance, and there is no changing what God has decreed.[83]

1. Jar., 278.
2. Ibid., 380.
Appeal to the Qur'an is implicit in the line of al-Farazdaq on 'Abd-al-Malik:—

Earth, being God's property, He has given His caliph to run, thus the one in command over it is invincible.[84]² Accordingly the caliph is designated as 'khalīfat allāh'.³ Other titles as amīn allāh (God's trusty vicar),⁴ ra'ī allāh (God's pastor)⁵ and the like are frequently employed.

But since the post of caliph was more often than not a bone of contention, and claim to it by divine decree could easily be disclaimed by rival aspirants, more tangible arguments had to be sought. Sometimes the Umayyads are admitted to have gained the honour on account of their work for it, as in the line of Jarīr:—

The caliphate has devolved to you on account of the excellent deeds you have done, and its authority shall not be turned away [from you]. [85]⁶ The idea of mulk (sovereignty or possession) to be inherited by successors reflects the actual, as opposed to the ideal, state of affairs. Being a worldly sovereignty it must perforce derive from a recognizable origin. With the accession of Walīd I (86-96/705-715) poets begin to harp upon the legacy of 'Uthmān. The Marwūnid right to the caliphate is represented as deriving from the caliphate of 'Uthmān.

1. cf. Q., ii, 30-35.
2. Far., i, 24; cf. i, 25, 214; ii, 8, 17, 89, 100, 147, 210; Jar., 211, 307, 351, 396.
4. Ibid., 278; cf. Far., i, 286; ii, 9, 301.
5. cf. Far., i, 250.
Al-Farazdaq made the point clear when he said:—

They are the guardians of 'Uthman’s heritage, being an apparel of sovereignty over them that none can strip.\[86]\[1

Their right to the office is thus based upon their blood-relationship to the deceased caliph. Al-Farazdaq said:—

The sons of Marwan inherited it (i.e. the caliphate) one from another as an inheritance originating from him (i.e. Marwan) and from 'Uthman after a momentous event.\[87]\[2

In very few cases the caliphate is mentioned as the legacy of Muḥammad.\[3\] In many cases the Umayyads' right to it is given as going back to their ancient ancestors, as in the line of al-Farazdaq on Sulaymān:—

You have inherited the staff of sovereignty, not being remote relatives, from the two sons of Manaf: 'Abd-Shams and Ḥashim.\[88]\[4

The right of caliphs to bequeath the office to their sons becomes the recognized practice. Al-Farazdaq described Yazīd II as:—

A nursling of monarchs in a heritage whereby never a sovereign dies without bequeathing [to his successor] a da'is.\[89]\[5

The same poet told Sulaymān:—

The heritage of your father was not wrongfully usurped when it passed on to you.\[90]\[6

1. Far., i, 25.
2. Far., i, 285; cf., i, 62, 79, 81, 249, 336; ii, 89, 92-93, 210, 214.
5. Far., i, 348.
Despite their inalienable right to it through inheritance, references are sometimes made to other constitutional methods. The caliphate of Walīd I is described by al-Farazdaq as being:

A caliphate, the counsel of which was not forcibly obtained, its bases being firmly established by the Bountiful Compassionate.[91]

This counsel,"mashūra", however, does not apply to the process by which Walīd I acceded to power, for he had been the heir-apparent of his father 'Abd-al-Malik. It is likely that the poet is not referring to any practice employed by the Umayyads but to that earlier "mashūra" commissioned by 'Umar I, resulting in 'Uthmān's assumption of the caliphate, and this is strengthened by another remark of the same poet on Hishām:-

I perceive that the sovereignty of the Banū-Marwān had been firmly entrenched through a true counsel, their kinsman (i.e. 'Uthman) having contributed to it.[92]

The "bay'a" (the declaration of fealty) was mentioned once by Jarīr in the case of Sulaymān, but with a tag attached to it:-

Allegiance is now paid to you alone, because of the firmness of a bond of appointment.[93]

Despite the personal involvement of some poets, especially Jarīr, in the dynastic feuds, the general tendency was to side with whoever exercised authority. Efforts to enhance the prestige and public standing of caliphs increased with the

3. Far., i, 62.
passage of time. An excessive note of adulation is discernible in poetry addressed to later Umayyad caliphs. Al-Farazdaq referred to Walīd I as:-

To the most trustworthy [man] under the heavens, and the most entitled to uncontestable right,
I swear by the forelegs of sacrificial animals.....
That surely the mother who gave us al-Walīd as caliph is a nobler progenitor than the sun, had the moon been its offspring.[94]

With Sulaymān the idea of al-mahdī enters poetry as a constituent element of panegyric, especially in the poetry of al-Farazdaq. The epithet was not just another empty title of praise, but seemed to have been a matter of a popular belief spreading at the time. The idea is expressed by al-Farazdaq addressing Sulaymān:-

You are the one whom the Book has sent forth to us, in the words of the Torah and Psalms,
How many a priest or doctor used to inform us about the caliphate of the mahdī.[95]

The time seemed to have been one of adversity, following the repressive reign of al-Ḥajjāj. Prior to his accession, Sulaymān had been expected to rectify the damage, and he seemed to have promised people so, according to al-Farazdaq in his lines:-

[God] has answered our invocation and rescued us from misfortune through the caliphate of the mahdī,
You have thus been put to the test with regard to that which you had promised us if ever you were put in authority over us.[96]

With Yazīd II (101-105/720-724) the adulation reaches a high
peak. His mother is likened to Mary, the mother of Jesus, as in the line of al-Farazdaq:

No mother that I know of, except the mother of Jesus, resembles your mother as to the nobility and excellence of maternal origin.[97]

His authority would even be recognized by prophets:

Had the wise prophets kept company with him, they would have realised that with his grand sovereignty he was the real leader.[98]

It is not enough that he is described as the best of all the living and the dead after the apostles of God, as in the line of al-Farazdaq:

O you who exceed in excellence every living person whose foot is given protection by a shoe, and also, after the messengers of God, every dead person interred in a tomb.[99]

Other preposterous claims are attributed to him. Al-Farazdaq tells him:

Had there been any other prophet after the chosen (i.e. Muhammad) to undertake great tasks,
You would have been the one chosen by God after him to carry burdensome trusts.[100]

The caliph might have been the Prophet had not Muhammad been mentioned by Jesus:

Had not Jesus revealed the news about him, specifying him [by name], You would have been the Prophet inviting people to light.[101]

This adulation was probably also a reflection of notions widely spread by the Umayyads and their governors. A case

1. Ibid., i, 144.
2. Ibid.
3. Ibid., i, 213; cf. i, 346.
5. Ibid., i, 214.
In point was the report that Khalīd al-Qasrī, the governor of Iraq (106-120/724-738) used to argue in the same manner as al-Ḥajjāj regarding the sanctity of the caliph, and was reported further to have held the view that Hishām was better than the Prophet.¹

At the same time a kind of backward look is evident. The glorious past is often recalled in praising those later Umayyads. Thus Sulaymān is expected to repeat the model practices (ṣunan) of the rightly-guided caliphs and early Umayyads who followed the Prophetic ṣunna.² He is also described as having followed the ṣunna of ‘Umar I and ‘Uthmān.³ Hishām is also described as having brought back the ṣunna of the two ‘Umars and to have filled the world with justice after oppression.⁴ Not only is this caliph credited with restoring the glorious ṣunna, but it is asserted that his prestige is further augmented by possessing the holy relics of the prophet: the pulpit, the stick and the ring.⁵

Although the poets did not confine themselves to any one line of argument or even to a consistent set of arguments, it is clear nevertheless that they reflected principles systematically put forward by the supporters of the dynasty.

¹ Aghāni, xix, 60.
² cf. Far., i, 265-266.
³ cf. Ibid., ii, 101.
⁴ Ibid., ii, 294.
⁵ cf. Ibid., i, 59; ii, 302.
ii. POETS AND ADMINISTRATORS

The dictum attributed to 'Uthman that "God restrains through the Sultan (i.e. state power) more than He does through the Qur'an" though intended as a statement of fact rather than of parable, found an apt justification in the activities of some poets who continued for a long time to challenge the authority of the state by asserting their right to independent action. These activities, however, when viewed from the angle of the social development of the misr as a whole, can be seen to represent general social tendencies rather than purely individual acts prompted by personal initiative. We can discern in them a variety of patterns corresponding to the different phases of development attained. Generally the tendency to revolt was more manifest in the badiya than in the misr. But at times of political troubles when the authority of government had become weak, the misr itself usually exhibited signs of lawlessness that found expression in the works of contemporary poets. Taking the period discussed as a whole and making allowance for the fact that the pace of urban development was not always uniform, thus allowing different stages to exist side by side at the same time, the overall picture is one of evolution where the intractability of Bedouins, very marked in the early stages, gradually gives way to resignation and a form of conformity.

The aversion of Bedouins to authority underlay the early episode of Dabi' ibn-al-Ḥarīth,¹ a gamester and a poet who

¹. cf. Naq., 219-222; Hayawan, i, 181-182.
lived in the bādiya during the caliphate of 'Uthmān. He was accused of satirizing a Nahshalī woman of Tamīm, telling her sons:—

As for your mother, do not give her up to your dog, for the disobedience of mothers is a great [offence], Now you are a dog that has grown fond of what you see — able to hear and to perceive what is above the bed, When she burns incense late at night, he spends the night over the bed, snarling.[102]¹

The Nahshalīs raised the case to 'Uthmān who sent for him. After hearing the satire the caliph told the poet, "I know no one among the Arabs who is more obscene and debased than you. I presume that had the Apostle of God been alive then certainly there would have been a Quranic revelation in your case." He then ordered his hair to be shorn to disgrace him and offered a fifth of his camels to the Nahshalīs as a compensation.

The penalty was meant to deter the poet, but his mischief could not be contained by legal measures. He soon retaliated by battering the head of another Nahshalī, and the case was reported once more to the caliph. Ḍābi' was brought to Medina and kept in custody, pending trial. He attempted to assassinate the caliph while he was inspecting the prison inmates one morning. The plot was foiled and the poet was lashed and kept in prison until he died. But before he died he had expressed his grudge against 'Uthmān in a bitter satire which he asked to be delivered to his folk. He told them:—

Is there anyone returning — may God convey him in safety — who will convey on my behalf verses when their composer is dead?

Let none after me accept the adverse consequences of an affair for fear of meeting death, because death will inevitably overtake him,

1. Naq., 220; Bal., Ansāb, v, 84-85; Hayawān, i, 181-182.
Nor should you blame me after my death, for it would be no disgrace to kill the one I have not tried to kill, I resolved but failed to act [though] I was near success - would that I had succeeded! - in causing the womenfolk of Uthman mourn over him,

Many a woman will say when Dabi’ dies in prison, "How excellent as a youth had he been to be lonely with or to enter upon."

How bad as a cousin was Pirūs when I called upon him, swinging his buttocks about.[103]

The personal note which runs through these lines and the rest of the poem betrays, apart from the sense of disenchantment at his relatives’ failure to come to his rescue, his conception of the whole affair as being a personal contest between him and ‘Uthman the man, not the epitome of the state. This conception was reinforced by the attitude of some of the early caliphs especially Mu‘āwiya who exercised ḥilm (tolerance) in his dealings with Bedouins and acted at times not so much as a sovereign but rather as a tribal shaykh. Al-Qulākh al-‘Anbarī, a Baṣrī poet related an encounter he had with Mu‘āwiya in his lines:

Mu‘āwiya, the son of Hind, asked me whether I had met the father of the progeny of ‘Abd-Shams (i.e. Umayya), And I told him, "I saw your grandfather an old shaykh who had not [completely] lost sight, Led by a wretched slave with legs wide apart;" he interrupted saying, to dispel my dubiousness, "Nay, that was his son" (i.e. Ḥarb).[104]

It is evident that this conception of the relationship between ruler and poet was an anomaly incompatible with recent developments in Arab life. Despite the survival of a tribal

1. Naq., 221-222.
2. cf. Dhayl al-Amālī, 137 for a similar case involving Mālik ibn-ar-Rayb.
structure to which this outlook was relevant, the emergence of the state under the aegis of the caliph and his governors who controlled the administration of the empire, required and eventually effected a comparable change in attitudes. Requirements of good government necessitated the use of force to eliminate all forms of rebellion and intransigence. Poets, whose activities often ran counter to such requirements were the most exposed to disciplinary measures. Their freedom to practise what their Jāhili counterparts had indulged in unmolested was increasingly restricted as the power of the state gradually overwhelmed the major elements of dissent. The most important development in this connection was the tribes' abdication of their right to give protection to their individual members when they committed crimes. The state assumed that function and people were expected to seek redress from it. This development weakened the position of poets in their stand against the state immensely. The impassioned invective of Ḍābi' against his cousin for failing to come to his aid indicates his unawareness of the change that had come about. The realisation on the part of other poets was not long delayed. The Tamīmī poet and leader Ḥāritha ibn-Badr al-Ghudānī discovered the futility of insurrection when the caliph 'Alī ordered his blood to be shed unavenged for his waywardness. He sought the protection of most Arab nobles within reach but they all rebuffed him. They advised him, however, to contact Sa'id ibn-Qays of Hamdān who had access

to 'Ali. Sa‘īd had to argue in his favour by quoting a verse of the Qur'ān exonerating him from his guilt. Ḥāritha, narrowly escaping death, recounted his plight in an eulogy addressed to the Yemenī benefactor:—

May God reward the Sa‘īd of goodness with bounty - I mean Sa‘īd ibn-Qays, the chief of Hamdān, Who rescued me from the brink of a dust-like and dark pit, and but for his intercession I would have been covered with my shrouds, [When] the Tamim ibn-Murr had said, "We shall not communicate with him," and likewise had refused the Qays ibn-‘Aylan.[105]

Insurrection provided governors with opportunities to tighten their grip. The chaos following the murder of ‘Uthmān dictated the measures of Ziyād (45-53/665-672) who was aware of the adverse effect of words and ideas on authority.[3] In his time fear of authority became a potent element in poetic composition. This stands out prominently in the early poetry of al-Farazdaq when Ziyād forced him to seek refuge in Medina. His fear is real and intense:—

Threats have reached me from Ziyād, rendering me sleepless, though the torrent of Liwa and the highlands of Tihama separate me [from him], So I spent my night as though I was clothed in an undergarment of Khaybūri fever creeping in my bones, or covered with the poisonous blood of speckled snakes, I recognize that whenever you become enraged against someone, he spends his night sleepless even though he has plenty of kindred.[106]

1. cf. Agh., xxi, 35.
2. Ibid., 36.
3. An index of his sensitivity to potential forms of sedition was his remark on someone he had heard abusing time, "Had he been aware of [the identity of] time I would have decapitated him. Time is authority (sulfūn)." Mub., Kāmil, iii, 116.
The mere remembrance of the governor excites his fear:

Whenever the memory of Ziyād occurs in my mind, fear causes my bowels to contract, and the partings of my hair to become grey.[107]

Ziyād is further described as a frightening beast that terrifies even lions:

[I am] running away from a reddish austere one that scares away lions by threats.[108]

When the poet actually met a lion while traversing the desert in his flight he addressed it:

You are certainly more tractable than Ziyād, so be gone O destroyer of travellers.[109]

The measures of ʿUbaydallah ibn-Ziyād against Ibn-Hufarrigh, those of al-Qubaʾ against Jarīr, al-Farazdaq and Murra ibn-Maḥkūm, those of Muṣʿab against this latter poet, Murra, and those of Khālid ibn-Asīd against al-Farazdaq all tended to emphasize the strength of the state in dealing with intractable poets. With al-Ḥajjāj this became an important element of policy. He deliberately frightened poets and felt it necessary as a matter of policy to emphasize his relentlessness in dealing with opponents. His repressive

1. Ibid., ii, 40.
2. Ibid., i, 146.
3. Ibid., i, 257.
4. Ibn-Qut., Sh., i, 319-323; Yāq., Irshād, vii, 192-198; Agh., xvi, 52-67; Ibn-Sall., 554-556.
5. cf. Chapter III,
7. Agh., xi, 10.
measures forced a number of poets and learned men who had fallen out with him, to seek refuge outside his jurisdiction. Abū-'Amr ibn-al-'Alā’, the philologist, had to flee to Yemen, while Yaḥyā ibn-Ya‘mar was deported to Khurāsān reputedly because he had detected some grammatical inaccuracies in the governor’s speech though his Shī‘ite leanings and his outspoken criticism of al-Ḥajjāj’s building of his town at Wāsīt might have been the real causes. Al-Ḥajjāj also deported most of the outspoken qurrā’ (reciters of Qur’ān) after the revolt of Ibn-al-Ash‘ath, decapitated a few and imprisoned others. He was firm with poets especially those who challenged his authority. A host of poets, among whom al-‘Udayl ibn-al-Farkh, Malik ibn-ar-Rayb, Sawwar ibn-al-Muḍarrab and Yazīd ibn-al-Ḥakam stand out conspicuously, had for some reason or other to flee from his wrath. Some of them took refuge in the desert as in the case of Sawwar ibn-al-Muḍarrab of Tamīm, who was apparently opposed to the measures taken by al-Ḥajjāj to force people to join al-Muḥallab in his fight against the Azārīqā. He stated his contention in his lines:-

2. Yāq., Irshād, vii, 296.
3. Suyūṭī, Bughya, 417; cf. ‘Iqd, ii, 47.
Will al-Ḥajjāj kill me for failing to visit Zarābī at his command, leaving my heart behind with Hind? If your satisfaction lies only in returning me to Qaṣārī, then I reckon you will never achieve satisfaction.

When my she-camel passes beyond the transit posts then I defy al-Ḥajjāj to bring me back.

Would the Banū-Marwan hope for my obedience while my people are Tamīm and the desert lies in front of me? 

The same attitude was taken by the Tamīmī brigand, Ṣālik ibn-ard-Rayb who had earlier questioned what he thought to be the one-sided justice of the state in his words:

Is it a particular privilege of the state (sultan) that whatever belongs to it is given, whereas whatever is demanded [of it] is denied?
It is up to you, 0 family of Marwan; seek my left-overs, for there is in them no satisfaction,
[For] I am not like the docile ass, remaining with its owners in fetters, enjoying the luxuries of oppression, Were it not that the Apostle of God originated from you, it would have become manifest which [of our two tribes] is satisfied with receiving half [his entitlements].

When he fell out with al-Ḥajjāj he addressed the Banū-Marwan:

If you treat us justly, 0 family of Marwan, we shall draw nearer to you, otherwise know that we are keeping aloof, For we have, as a substitute for you, a place of retirement [reached] by reddish white camels eager for desert breeze, And there is always refuge in the world [for those] forsaking the land of humiliation, and every habitable land is home to me, Had it not been for the Banū-Marwan, the son of Yūsuf would have been, as he used to be, one of the slaves of Iyad, When he had been the slave [who] acknowledged submissiveness, making his way morning and evening to the boys in hamlets (i.e. he was a teacher).

But it was not always easy to escape the wrath of al-Ḥajjāj even in the hearts of deserts. The episode of al-‘Udayl ibn-al-Farkh is a case in point. He fled to Byzantium either because he had committed a murder,¹ or because he criticised al-Ḥajjāj,² instigated the people of Iraq against him,³ and tried to exploit the rivalry between him and Yazīd ibn-al-Ḥuhallāb, when he said:—

If al-Ḥajjāj has secured his door with niggardliness, then the door of the Azdī youth is opened with graciousness,

His two hands [are such that] one of them allows what it contains to be plundered out of graciousness while the other overpowers and wounds the enemies,

Come all of you to [partake of] the graciousness of the emir whose favours are diffused among people,

Unlike a foreigner belonging to Thamūd in whose palm is ill-disposed determination against liberality and graciousness.[113]⁴

For a while the poet felt secure in his refuge and he made a point of demonstrating to al-Ḥajjāj his inaccessibility in his lines:—

There lies between me and the hand of al-Ḥajjāj — preventing it from reaching me — a broad expanse of land that only excellent camels can traverse,

Waste lands looking alike as though their mirage is clean sheets in the hands of washer women.[114]⁵

But when the hand of al-Ḥajjāj did reach him and extricated him from Caesar,⁶ he felt the chill in his spine which he expressed in his lines:—

---

1. Ṣah., xx, 12.
2. Ibid., 13; Ibn-Qut., Sh., 375.
3. Ṣah., xx, 18.
4. Ibid., 13.
5. Ibid., 13; Sh., 375.
6. Sh., 376.
I am haunted with fear of al-Ḥājjāj to such an extent that I feel as though a broken bone is being briskly stirred in my heart, whenever al-Ḥājjāj is mentioned I conceal a fright that sends a shiver through my crooked ribs.\[115\]^1

His despair was manifest when he found himself in the presence of the governor:-

Here I am [brought] to you, having found the world narrow after roaming everywhere, had I been at Thahlan or the two branches of Aja mountain I would have thought that you would, unless you desist, see me.\[116\]^2

His whole tribe of Bakr did not dare give him protection against the governor and told him bluntly, "Al-Ḥājjāj cannot be opposed and [all that we can do] is to ask for you to be returned as a favour from him."\[^3\] The boasting - mentioned earlier - of such poets as al-Ḥusawwar about the power of his tribe was often of no avail when the recalcitrant poet did fall in the hands of the ruler. Mu‘āwiya ibn-Ṣa‘ṣa‘a, the uncle of the Tamīmī chief al-Āḫnaf ibn-Qays and who was the ruler of Baḥrayn incurred the displeasure of al-Ḥājjāj who dismissed him, fined him 40,000 dirhams and imprisoned him. His people let him down and to console himself he told them bitterly:-

Is there none among Tamīm who repels a catastrophe or one who is steadfast or who consoles when honour is defended?

Had I been a member of the two branches of Rabī‘a, the pillars and foundations of my house would have been honoured through them.\[117\]^4

3. Ibid., xx, 14; cf. Tab., ii, 192 for a similar reply of al-Āḫnaf ibn-Qays to Ibn-Mufarrigh when the latter asked his protection against ‘Ubaydallāh ibn-Ziyād.
This fear which the repression of al-Ḥajjāj induced in the hearts of his contemporaries found its most articulate exponents in al-Farazdaq and Jarīr who were themselves exceptionally subdued during his long tenure of office (75-95/695-714). The fact that al-Ḥajjāj and his deputies had used all forms of intimidation and coercion to bring poets to heel is attested by numerous references in their works. Al-Farazdaq, in a eulogy addressed to the caliph ʿAbd-al-Malik speaks of al-Ḥakam ibn-Ayyūb the deputy of al-Ḥajjāj in Baṣra, expressing his fear of him:

My heart was about to be carried away by flying [birds] out of fear when the son of Ayyūb said,
In the abode, "If you commit an offence you will incur punishment, including amputation and torture,
In a dreadful gaol wherein those open to suspicion are interned,"
So I said, "Is it of any avail if I approach you with obedience and a heart full of your fear?
Whatever you forbid I shall never approach, and nothing deters a self-controlled man like experience,
What you are after never escapes you, and what you prohibit is never approached."

The poet tells al-Ḥajjāj on another occasion:

You have conferred on me a favour like the favour of rain benefiting whomever it falls on,
Had my family been in China and had I closed the gate of Hajar (in Bahrayn),
[Locking] myself inside, I would have seen, O son of Abū-'Aqīl, claws and teeth of yours behind me,
Your pardon, O son of Yusuf, is the best [of pardon], and you are the severest avenger when you chastise,
I have seen people so much in dread of you that they feared [the hastening] of Reckoning at your hands.

1. cf. Dhayl al-ʿAmālī, 43.
3. Ibid., i, 83.
The awe and terror which al-Ḥajjāj generates in his beholders is enormous:

When al-Ḥajjāj appears to people they cast their eyes down and whoever was talking among them becomes silent, and they are reduced to those who urinate out of fear, and those who are choked with saliva, People's hearts fly east and west leaving them either muttering confusedly or delirious.[120]

His wife's exhortation against rebellion indicates the fear of ordinary folk of the governor:

She says, her eyes flowing with tears, "Do you realise your position with respect to the one against whom I cannot see how you can contend? Keep away from al-Ḥajjāj, for he is difficult to press [even] if he overlooks the one competing against him, No one can feel secure against al-Ḥajjāj - knowing that the jinn seek to ward off his punishment - except one of feeble resolution."[121]

The magnitude of the poet's fear was such that he disclosed it in emphatic terms to the caliph al-Walīd I, recalling to mind similar lines which an-Nabigha addressed to an-Nu‘man:

I was so overpowered by fear that had I seen death coming forward to take me away - and the visitation of death is detested -, It would have been less fearful than al-Ḥajjāj when he contracts his eyelids as from above he lowers his gaze, I crawl forward and, although a month's march and a night with its fixed stars separate me from you, I press on as if you were in sight, I recalled what relations existed between you and myself when the lowlands of Tihama caused my descent from the mountain range, And I felt sure that however remote I make myself from you, my remoteness will bring me to nothing save that against which I guard, And had I mounted the wind, and then you sought after me, I would have been like a thing overtaken by its fate, So I could think of nothing other than driving my she-camel towards you when my affair had become tangled and confused,

1. Ibid., ii, 53; cf., ii, 137.
2. Far., ii, 204.
I dread of al-Ḥajjāj the assault of a lurking lion, the females of which can strike the necks.[122]

Even Jarīr who became intimately connected with al-Ḥajjāj and often boasted of his entrenched position with the authorities,2 found it imperative to depict the fear induced by the governor in himself and in others. In a eulogy addressed to al-Ḥajjāj he says:—

Who feels secure against al-Ḥajjāj? As for his punishment it is bitter, and as for his bond it is firm.

Never have I tasted sleep without being frightened, nor have I easily swallowed any saliva,

I was so filled with dread of you that my fear forced me down though the top of ‘Amaya mountain had given me refuge.[123]

He tells al-Ḥajjāj on another occasion:—

They are so much afraid of you that men’s hearts throb like sand-grouses trapped in snares.[124]

There is, however, sufficient evidence to indicate that a sizeable portion of the poetry composed during the tenure of al-Ḥajjāj depicting fear, was not always so much a natural response to real situations — though these might have existed intermittently — as a part of a concerted policy of intimidation and fear which al-Ḥajjāj energetically pursued to ensure the success of the physical measures he had adopted to liquidate opposition. The fact that most of this poetry extolling the terrifying characteristics of the governor was recited in his presence as praise, indicates the relish in which he held this genre of poetry. His sensitivity to any poetry — even in

1. Far., 1, 251.
3. Ibid., 615-6; cf. Dhayl al-Amālī, 43.
his praise - which smacks of inciting or condoning rebellion is tremendous. It is reported that when he heard the lines of al-‘Udayl ibn-al-Farkh⁴ in his praise:—

Leave aside cowardice, 0 men of Iraq, for whoever fails to fight is humiliated and taken captive, Al-Ḥajjāj has certainly unsheathed his sword, so be upright and let none deviate [from truth],[125]² he asked his courtiers what they thought of them. On being told that the poet praised him he said, "No! Rather he instigated the people of Iraq against me," and he sent after him, but the poet managed to escape.³ When Jarīr said in the middle of a celebrated poem in his praise:—

Ask the coward when he holds back his horse, "Can you ever escape the snare of death?
So suspend yourself to the constellation of Ursa in flight or [take refuge] in seas with towering waves," Who has barred the source of hypocrisy against them, and who darts furiously upon enemies, as does al-Ḥajjāj? [126]⁴ he interrupted the poet retorting angrily, "You have emboldened people against me you son of a stinking slave," to which the poet only remarked in bewilderment, "By God I never noticed that except at this moment, 0 emir."⁵

It is in response to this policy that poets exerted themselves to represent the formidable al-Ḥajjāj in a Herculean mould, and to invest him with the appropriate traits of invincibility. He is often represented as a sword of God, and a scourge of the enemies of the regime. Al-Farazdaq tells the caliph ‘Abd-al-Malik:—

1. They are also attributed to Jarīr, cf. Diwan, 354-5.
3. Ibid.
5. Ḥādīth, i, 84.
O Commander of believers whose affairs we have tried [and found] all straightforward and correct,
Know that al-Hajjaj is but a sword whereby skulls and necks are cut off,
He was the sword with which Marwan rendered succour to the smitten ‘Uthman, son of Arwa.[127]1

On another occasion he represents al-Hajjaj as a blazing meteor:-

He is the blazing meteor wherewith the enemy is confounded, and he is the sword which Mu‘āmar employs as a staff,
He revived Iraq after its pillars had been undermined by an all-consuming insurrection.[128]2

He gives a vivid description of his measures to reduce the anarchy of Iraq:-

When al-Hajjaj threatens or intends to threaten [somebody], fear of him causes what is in the wombs of pregnant women to fall down,
He is capable of a sudden attack such that, whoever succeeds in averting it, continues to live afterwards with trembling limbs,
Never has al-Hajjaj followed, in guiding his subjects, the example of one who is haughty or cowering,
How many a man, weak-sighted of eyes, blind of heart, you caused, together with him whose head deviates from truth, to be upright,
By means of a sword with which you strike, for the sake of God, whoever rebels, on the base of the neck,
You have cured Iraq from ailment, leaving therein no suspicion after the upsurge of calamities,
And they were like an ailing man, his suffering deep beneath the ribs, cured by an expert doctor,
Who cauterised [the spot of] ailment with branding iron, so that he dispelled therewith from the heart the evil eye of every Genie and devil.[129]3

Jarīr, in turn, portrays the effectiveness of al-Hajjaj:-

When the caliph kindles the fire of a war, he recognizes that al-Hajjaj is the blaze that kindles most effectively,
You have avenged yourself on the demons of Iraq, reducing them to submission,

1. Far., i, 82; cf., i, 24; cf. p. 159 above.
2. Far., i, 349.
3. Far., ii, 137.
And they used to say: No emir who applies canonical penalties and follows the Book will ever suit us, When your traps hold fast to a rebel he conceives that fate is drawing nearer, In the sense that there is no turning back the sword when it rips off the diaphragm from the lung.\[130]\(^4\)

He advises obedience and warns against rebellion:-

The son of Yusuf is clear-sighted, clear in his manner [of dealing], a fact you should know and be certain about, He prohibited bribery, indicated to you the true course of guidance, and caused thieves to desist from nocturnal activities, So fall in line and be clear of the course of guidance, avoiding secret talks, for they are no longer tenable. If the enemies shoot at you, you [retaliate by] throwing at them the top of the ‘Amaya mountain or the depressed hill of Suwaj, You have broken the resistance of every hypocrite, giving protection to the provision-bags of pilgrims.\[131]\(^2\)

The death of al-Ḥajjāj in 95/714 and the accession of the pro-Yemenī caliph Sulaymān ibn-‘Abd-al-Malik in 96/715 were turning points in politics and attitudes of poets. In the first place they heralded the termination of the Qaysī hegemony over both Iraq and Khurasan and resulted in the assassination of their governor Qutayba by the combined forces of Tamīm and the Yemen.\(^3\) The episode brought into the open the clash of interests between the contending parties which the repressive policy of al-Ḥajjāj had staved off for about 20 years. For although al-Ḥajjāj leaned heavily on the support of Qays in times of crisis,\(^4\) he was generally above party politics and attempted to rule as an Umayyad rather than a Qaysī governor. This perhaps, in addition to his

2. Ibid., 74; cf. also 95-96, 315-316, 353-356.
3. cf. Chapter I, pp. 24-25 above.
4. Ibid., 23.
firmness, explains the muted tone of tribal poetry during his reign. The monolithic support of most factions, enjoyed for some time by 'Abd-al-Walid and his successor al-Walid I, was no longer possible after the death of al-Ḥajjāj. After him the tone of political animosity grows sharper as the various caliphs increasingly sought the support of one faction against the others. 1 Tribalism received a shot in the arm when it became, more than at any time before, firmly geared to the machinery of caliphal politics. Caliphs and governors tended to represent not the whole community, but distinct tribal interests. Poets in their turn projected these conflicting tendencies according to their respective loyalties. Thus the policy adopted by Sulayman against Qays and the memory of al-Ḥajjāj, found its exponent in al-Farazdaq who said regarding al-Ḥajjāj:—

Had the host of al-Ḥajjāj, the family of Mu‘attib, encountered an adversity which only the enemy used to suffer,
The survivors among them have become debased, and in hell fire is their final abode, being grin-faced,
They used to see the vicissitudes of fortune on others, and now these turned against them with chastisement,
It was his custom, whenever he was exhorted to fear God, to be goaded by a frenzy with which it was impossible to contend,
Come on to Islam and justice among us, for the insanity of Iraq has disappeared.[132] 2

The poet, finding his people's anti-Qaysī stand in line with that of the caliph, does not hesitate to proclaim his people's loyalty and to indicate the humiliation they suffered earlier:—

1. Ibid., 24.
2. Far., ii, 75-76; cf. also, i, 19-22, 265, 268; ii, 75, 100, 309-310.
If we are not given protection on account of our obedience and our love and gratefulness for the mahdi, then we are visited in our abodes by messengers of chastisement with the rumble of thunder [like that following the hamstringing] of Thamūd's young camel, we have achieved glory through you after having been abased, and we used to refuse coercion.[133]

He seizes the opportunity of Qutayba's murder to assail Qays for their rebellion and to praise his tribe Tamīm, representing them as the defenders of the caliphate:-

You (i.e. Jarīr) regretted disobedience when you saw us like the mountain peaks with projecting rocks, Steadfast in obedience such that, had the mountains of Tayyi, and the depressed hills of Tihama directed themselves towards it, To transfer it, they would have failed to tackle that part of it resting permanently at a height of over seventy [statures]. Nothing lies between him who fails to pay allegiance and between Tamīm but the cutting of throats.[134]

The position of Jarīr, who had been the staunch defender of Qays and a close associate of al-Ḥajjāj, was embarrassing to him at this juncture. This is reflected in his Diwan where he addresses only one poem to Sulaymān as compared with nine by al-Farazdaq, describing the hardships of Nizār and alluding indirectly to the injustices of al-Ḥajjāj. When he found it necessary to rebut the allegations of his rival al-Farazdaq regarding the murder of Qutayba he steered a middle course, attempting to placate both the caliph and Qays. Since Wāki, the assassin of Qutayba, belonged to the clan of Jarīr, the poet had a better claim to boast of his kinsman's act before the caliph. So he told al-Farazdaq:-

1. Far., i, 263-264.
2. Ibid., ii, 311-312.
Someone other than yourself has fulfilled to the caliph his pledge, and has brightened the faces of al-Ahtam family,

For [it was] Waki', who, when Mujashi' lost heart, sufficed to arrest the widening cleavage of insurrection.[135]

But he was at the same time earnest to clear the name of Qays from the charge of treason levelled by al-Farazdaq. He expresses his sorrow to the tribe of Qutayba, Bahila, and instead of representing his murder as an act committed in defence of the caliphate, he makes it, quite rightly, a question of blood-revenge:-

O Bahila, I have never liked the murder of the son of Muslim, nor that you should frighten your people with wrongful acts,

O Bahila, you have avenged your blood when you murdered the kindred of Qays ibn-'Asim [of Tamim].[136]

The prominence of the tribal factor in politics is further attested by the reactions aroused by the rebellion of Yazid ibn-al-Muhallab (101-102/719-720) who had managed to escape from the prison of 'Umar II shortly before the accession of the pro-Qaysi caliph Yazid II (101-105/720-724). By attempting to usurp the caliphate he represented a danger not only to the Umayyads, but also to the Nuḍar and Qays as a whole. So Jarîr and al-Farazdaq were at one in celebrating his defeat and praising the caliph Yazid II\(^4\) for bringing about his downfall. They also praised the generals who had actually defeated him in the battlefield.\(^5\)

---

2. Ibid., 461.
3. cf. Chapter I, 23-25; also Wellhausen, Arab Kingdom, 312-319.
5. cf. Far., i, 260, 407; ii, 21, 36.
What appeared earlier as an obvious reaction of Bedouins against authority in general, manifesting itself in the activities of certain individual poets, as we have seen earlier, found a better justification now that the state itself had become partisan. Poets identified themselves with their respective groups and began to assail governors acting as the spokesmen of their people. Thus the appointment of ‘Umar ibn-Hubayra of Fazara, as governor of Iraq in place of Maslama ibn-‘Abd-al-Malik, prompted al-Farazdaq to compose a few lines indicating the displeasure of Tamīm who loathed the ascendancy of Qays:-

The riding qāmels turned away with Maslama, who had been bidden farewell, so pasture yourself O Fazara, may you find your pasture unwholesome!

I have already known that if Fazara were given a government post, Ashja‘ would certainly aspire to be emirs,

And I can see now that the familiar shapes of things have assumed different appearances so much so that even the Umayyads seek the succour of Fazara,

The son of Bishr (i.e. ‘Abd-al-Malik) was dismissed as was the son of ‘Amr (i.e. Sa‘īd, governor of Khurasan) before him while the governor of Harat (i.e. Sa‘īd ibn-‘Abd-al-‘Aziz) is expecting a similar fate.\[137\]

The poet became notorious for satirizing the Qaysī governor and he addressed several pieces to the caliph regarding him.

He once told Yazīd II:-

O Commander of believers! [We know] that you are a compassionate ruler who is neither vicious nor greedy,

How come that you give Iraq and its two rivers as sustenance to a Fazari whose shirt is lopped at the hand (i.e. a thief)?

And Never before had a tender of pregnant she-camels trusted him with the two hip-bones of a young she-camel (i.e. he copulates with it). Abu-‘l-Muthanna has become profuse in speech in Iraq and has taught his people the eating of delicious sweets.\[138]\(^1\)

The fears of al-Farazdaq and his tribal group were not always mere emotional reactions. They were sometimes justified by the actions of the governor who seemed to have imposed some sanctions on the poet and his people. Al-Farazdaq told him on one occasion:—

You have stopped a pension coming from a hand, the owner of which partakes of no share in a Fazari breast (i.e. the caliph),
Thus becoming, with respect to what you have stopped, like somebody attempting to hold water in his palm, his fingers failing to secure it.\[139]\(^2\)

He alludes to the punitive measures taken by the governor:—

Had Ghaṭafān been guiltless in their dealings with me, their wise men would have blamed ‘Umar,
When he feigned bravery in my case, scaring me away by shouting from sun-set to sun-rise,
If you prohibit the dates from Razan to our purveyor, you cannot debar the majority of the clan from [obtaining dates from] Hajar.\[140]\(^3\)

The poet was forced to seek refuge with the caliph whom he told:—

In reaching you I have outstripped the two sons of Fazāra who had intended detaining me in fetters,
I told them: Was it not God who had given me protection earlier against the invincible Ziyad?\[141]\(^4\) 

He further expressed his predicament in a long poem addressed to the caliph in which he said:—

---

2. Far., ii, 93.
3. Ibid., i, 230.
4. Ibid., ii, 281.
Were it not for their (i.e., the camels) removing me when the rapidly moving means of death had drawn nearer, I would have been like an antelope overcome by traps whereas it had always dreaded falling in a snare.

There is no protector after God better than the one at whose steps I put the foot of a scared man, To the best protector in whom one can seek refuge, and the most faithful to his promise [given] to the fugitive who is approaching, The abyss of death which, given the chance of carrying him hurriedly, would have hurled him in remotest deserts,

But there is no harm now that I grasped a handle, a most firm handle, belonging to the best of caliphs, He quickened my soul after it had heaved with fear, the throbbing of the leaping heart having forced me to walk out, And he averted what they had wilfully planned against me, together with what they had registered elegantly in documents.[142]

But it seems that the poet was eventually imprisoned and ‘Umar refused any intercession on his behalf until the Tamīmī rajāz - poet Abū-Nukhayla addressed to him the lines:—

You released the prisoner of Bakr the day before, so is there not—may my people and my property be your ransom—Some reason, plea or excuse to save the ungrateful Tamīmī, From the heavy brown rings of shackle? He never ceased to be mad, His noble descent elevates [him] but his inferior intelligence pulls him down, so grant him as a present to your uncles on the festival marking the end of fasting,[143]

when he set him free.

The reign of Hishām (105-125/723-743) and the governorship of his deputy in Iraq, Khālid ibn-‘Abdallāh al-Qasrī (105-120/723-738) represented the culmination of tribal feeling and recalled in many respects memories of the days of Ziyād and al-Ḥajjāj. Despite his otherwise irreproachable

1. Far., ii, 17.
2. Agh., xviii, 141-142.
record of administrative achievement over 15 years,¹ his Yemeni leanings impelled him to take some harsh measures against his political - who usually coincided with tribal - opponents, a course of action accentuating an already tense situation. He was apparently passionately hostile to Muğar and Nizār,² and there are sufficient indications that relations between him and the Tamīmīs had become embittered long before his appointment to Iraq. The story is related³ that when Khalīd had governed Medina on behalf of Sūlaymān (96-98) he lashed a Qurashi youth excessively and his father raised the case to the caliph, imploring Al-Farazdaq who was visiting the court at the time, to intercede on his behalf. The poet is reported to have said:-

Ask Khalīd, may God be unbountiful to him, when did it come about that Qasr ruled Quraysh and subjugated them? Was that before the Apostle of God or after his era? Certainly the fat among Quraysh has become lean, We desired his guidance, may God deny him guidance, but then his mother is not one whose offspring is [likely to be] rightly guided.[144]⁴

The caliph became furious and ordered Khalīd's hand to be amputated, and only the intercession of Yazīd ibn-al-Muhallab, the caliph's favourite, could persuade the latter to commute the penalty to lashing. Al-Farazdaq is said to have recorded the event in his lines:-

1. cf. Wellhausen, pp. 326ff. where he makes a sympathetic assessment of his rule.
2. cf. Agh., xix, 29, 60.
3. Ibid., xix, 61; 'Iqd, v, 192-193; Far., i, 301.
I swear by my life that showers, other than those emanating from falling rain (i.e. whips) were poured on the back of Khalid.
Would you, O member of Qasr, beat on allegation of rebellion, him who is obedient, while you disobey the commander of believers?

Had it not been for Yazid ibn-al-Muhallab, a weak-limbed bird would have soared with your hand to its weaklings in the nest,
So receive death at your own hands for you have only been requited, in retaliation, with brown whips,
I imagine that you are excessively grieved over [the loss of] a quarter of a hypocrite (i.e. his hand), being clothed in robes of treachery and betrayal.[145]

Khalid's encounter with the Tamimi leader 'Umar ibn-Yazid al-Usaydi at the court of Hisham in which 'Umar castigated the Yemen and exposed their rebellious record, culminating in the insurrection of Ibn-al-Muhallab,2 embittered him all the more and eventually led him to lash the articulate Tamimi to death, precipitating a crisis that continued to dominate the Basri scene for a long time. The poetry of this period accordingly gives the picture of an atmosphere fraught with repression, fear and recriminations. The lukewarm acquiescence which poets had earlier displayed in their relations with al-Ḥajjāj, gave way to open criticism and defiance. Al-Farazdaq was most outspoken when he said, taking advantage of the fact that Khalid's mother was a Christian slave from Byzantium:-

May the Compassionate break the back of a riding-beast which, tottering from Damascus, has brought us Khalid, How can he lead people [in prayer] whose mother believes that God is not One? He built a church for his mother where Christians [pray], and yet he demolishes out of unbelief the minarets of mosques.[146]

1. Far., i, 301.
He further attempted to incite the caliph against him in the lines:

> Act, O commander of believers, against Khālid and his associates, may God deny him purification,
> He built a church for his mother wherein [rests] the cross, and yet he demolishes mosques out of hatred for prayers.[147]

A closer look at the records reveals that the hostility was not always one-sided. Labaṭa, the son of al-Farazdaq, relates that when Khālid first arrived in Iraq and his father prepared himself to visit him, he told his father, "Father, this man is decidedly Yemenī in sentiments, and you know full well his bias, so make a point of reciting to him some of your poetry in praise of Yemenīs so as to receive his favours, since you have become too old to undertake any long journey," but the old poet remained silent until he was admitted to the governor and when asked to recite he said:

> People disagree as long as we don't come forward in unity before them, but there is no disagreement once Mūḍar reaches consensus.
> Amongst us are bases of necks topped by necks wherein the heads are rooted, containing the [organs of] hearing and seeing,
> We ally ourselves, God apart, to none but swords at times when the eye is drowned in tears,
> As for the enemy, we shall not soften to them until the stone softens to the one chewing it,[148]

and he then went out cutting short his son's remarks by retorting, "Be silent! Never have I filled his heart [with admiration] more than I did today." In point of fact the poet knew too well that his record with Khālid was beyond

---

2. Far., i, 200; Agh., xix, 30.
repair. On another occasion he approached the governor to aid him raise some blood-money he had undertaken to pay, but Khalīd retorted, "I can imagine you saying, 'I approach the weaver, the son of a weaver with a view to cheating him if he gives me, or to lampooning him if he refuses'. Yes I am the weaver, son of a weaver, and I shall never give you anything, so do what you will!" Farazdaq thereupon said, sarcastically:-

Would that I belonged to the vile Bajīla,‎[1] until that governor ruling over Iraq is discharged,
Then when the governor of the two Iraqs has turned away,
I would revert to [my position] among the family of noble and excellent men.[149]‎

In Başra itself al-Farazdaq was bound to come into collision with the security officer Mālik ibn-al-Mundhir ibn-al-Jārūd, whom Khalīd had appointed as his representative in the migr. Al-Farazdaq welcomed the occasion by satirizing Mālik in his line:

What renders the police of the migr hateful to us is that I saw Mālik, the progeny of a dog, put in charge of them.[150]​

The murder of 'Umar ibn-Yazīd al-Usaydī inflamed passions enormously among the Tamīm against Khalīd and his deputy Mālik who seemed to have actually carried out the order of killing. This prompted al-Farazdaq to compose some fiery lines on the occasion:

Has not the wrongful murder of Abu-Ḥāfṣ by 'Abd-al-Qays ranked among capital violations?
He died a victim of animosity without committing a crime, crying out to the caliph while his body was being cut to pieces.[151]​

1. Khalīd's tribe.
3. Ibid., xix, 41.
He is said to have told the caliph Hishām:-¹

When we lament we do not lament mishaps inflicted by Time, since days are fraught with contentions,
But we lament Khālid's violation of certain inviolable rights of ours, it is unlawful to infringe,
So ask the Banū-Marwān: What of an obligation and an inviolate undertaking the pledge of which is not honoured?
Certainly in the path of God is the shedding of our blood without any obvious guilt on our part;
Khālid has avenged the murder of Ibn-al-Muhallab, for amongst us reside the lasting remnants of guidance and its imām,
I see that the succour of Muḍar in the two migrās has weakened but the Syria of Qays is never weakened,
Now who would convey to Qays and Khindif in Syria narratives of incurable maladies,
The blood of Ibn-Yazīd became lawful to Khālid. What a pity for a soul the thirst of which cannot be quenched!
So make a reversal [of policy] O commander of believers, because they are but weak-minded Yemenis and you are their destroyer.
Is it [in revenge of] Ibn-Yazīd and Ibn-Zahr² that the blood of Tamīm was rendered lawful and their pasturing camels became free booty?
Should we be killed in your presence because we had killed your enemy in accordance with your dictates while the dust of war was still visible?
We displayed our indignation on your behalf, O family of Marwān, so show us your indignation, so that some souls might find their food palatable.[152]³

It is instructive to point out here that Jarīr who composed several poems on Hishām⁴ in which he scattered praise lavishly on the caliph and depicted the obedience of people to him, being careful not to make any specific reference to what was distressing his people, remarked in one of his poems:-

1. Abū-'Ubayda suspects that al-Farazdaq composed only 2 or 3 lines of this poem and that the rest was fabricated by Naṣr ibn-Sayyār, cf. Far., ii, 239.
2. These were two Yemenī Khārijīs killed by Tamīm
Do not treat the Banū-Tamīm harshly, for they have sincerely repented and returned to true guidance, Those [of them] whose heart suffered from any suspicion feared your punishment, while the prudent desisted, And remember the blood-relationship you have with the family of Barra, for kinship is demanding and can easily be satisfied.[153]

Al-Farazdaq seized the opportunity of Khalid's digging the canal entitled 'al-mubārakah' (blessed) at WāsFIT, an enterprise which seemed to have aroused discontent, and criticised him bitterly. He told him once:—

Some men of Tamīm have approached you with their testimony but you have washed away what is due to God by [condoning] the wrongful act of Malik, And you have spent the property of God improperly on your ominous and unblessed stream.[154]

The poet is said to have found himself in trouble with the caliph himself. He incurred the caliph's displeasure when he praised 'Alī ibn-al-Ḥusayn, thereby revealing his shi'i tendencies, and the caliph ordered him to be imprisoned. He is reported to have lampooned the caliph saying:—

Would you detain me between Medina and the spot towards which the most penitent of men's hearts yearn (i.e. Mecca)?

He frequently turns a head that does not belong to a chief, and [rolls] a squint eye with visible defects.[155]

1. Ibid., 10.
2. cf. Wellhausen, 348-349; cf. Diwan of Ru'ba, 151; Far., i, 339; Jar., 118, for attempts to sway public opinion in favour of such schemes.
3. Khalid refused their testimony regarding the charge that Malik had killed 'Umar al-Usaydi.
6. Agh., xix, 41; cf., Nag., 984; Far., i, 47.
The report claims that when the lines reached the caliph he released him.¹

Things came to a head when Khālid imprisoned Naṣr ibn-Sayyār al-Kinānī, and al-Farazdaq cried in exasperation and defiance:-

O Khālid! Had it not been for the [dictates of] faith you would not have been offered obedience, and but for the Banu-Marwan you would not have been reinforced with succour,
Nay, rather would you have found forbidding the fastening of his bonds, sons of war who are neither unarmed nor easily annoyed,
Now, O Banu-Marwan, the like of our endeavour, if the one who offers it bountifully is not given the credit for it,
Is likely to be forgotten when you summon people, and is liable to occasion rancour in the heart of him who reiterates it,
Is it not a truism that we never cease to fight with lances any detachment of cavalry until they submit to you forcibly?
If you do not desist, cavalry will brandish the spears, and we will summon Tamīm and then we demand no excuse,
Of you, and you will find us the sons of noble mothers who fulfilled their promise and paid that which is neither scanty nor diminished,
We are certainly the killers of kings when they come forth in the morning of battle, and we are not good at excusing [others].[156]²

The upshot of all this was that al-Farazdaq was arrested and imprisoned. He became frantic in composing poems defending himself, denying the many charges levelled at him, praising the caliph, Khālid and Mālik and expressing his consuming fear. The inability of his own people to defend him against the state was evident. Authority once more asserted itself and the rebellious poet was once more on the defensive, at the mercy of those he had persistently assailed. Mālik and his

¹. Argh., xix, 41-42.
². Far., i, 323.
family were praised\(^1\) and the poet portrayed the awe-inspiring qualities of Malik in a manner recalling his poetry on Ziyād and al-Ḥajjāj. Thus on one occasion he said:—

> When Malik throws away his turban then take your guard against the fits of his hands when he is enraged,
> For if they seize you aggressively there lies in them a fierce example of naked torment.\(^2\)

The fear that Malik induces in others is vividly described:—

> I have seen Abū-Ghassān suspending his sword from a shoulder that baffles whoever seeks to harm it,
> You behold people as though they are ready to shed their tears in his presence, their hearts throbbing violently and none among them is able to address him,
> Through him God has debased the wrong-doer while the wronged person became powerful and firm,
> The migr which previously lay waste - its remote and close quarters dreaded by all - has learnt,
> That you are the sword of God on earth which He unsheathes when the battalions of death glitter with swords.\(^3\)

He denies the charge\(^4\) laid against him and dwells on his lamentable condition in prison to enlist the mercy of Malik:—

> I swear by the Lord of ships when they sail and [by the place] where the well of Zamzam neighbours the Marwa,
> That your putting me in prison has not increased my dread of you over that fear which you knew,
> I seek refuge in a tomb containing the shrouds of Mundhir, an inviolable refuge for those seeking protection,
> How [terrible] is the condition of him who suffers fifty shackles and rings in addition to the intense darkness of night,
> I endure the whole night sleepless while some of those guarding me fall asleep leaving others awake,
> Had solid mountains suffered what my two legs endured they would have almost collapsed,
> O Malik! If I achieve release safely at your hands then it is like a case of a benefactor granting favour to a protégé,

---

1. cf. Far., i, 256; ii, 56, 121-123, 133, 317.
2. Ibid., i, 30.
3. Ibid., i, 70-71; cf. also ii, 249.
Khalid has taught me to walk as a fettered man and never before had I managed the easiest of such steps, I say to my two legs, being covered with silent loops and iron fetters restricting the pace:

"Is there none among the sons of al-Jarūd who would bestow favours on us as flows the torrent of the Euphrates whose banks are swept away?"[159]

Similarly he addressed a number of poems to Khalid in which he praised him and went out of his way to deny the charges and to acclaim the achievements of the governor, especially the canal:

They have alleged that I censured the stream belonging to Khalid, yet certainly al-Mubarak surpasses every other stream in abundance, And surely you will never fail to recognize my poetry, the forerunners of which when they come forth, Could wreck the mountain of Suwaj, had they been hurled at it; and had they touched Ḥira they would have disturbed and upset its firm and lofty rocks so that they became round, If I show patience it is in accordance with divine command, and the best of God's people are those showing maximum patience, I used to be excessively cautious, and had I felt any fear I would have been more cautious than the wild goat at the mountain top, But they approached me when I was feeling secure, never suspecting them, in broad daylight, but then whatever God has decreed should take its course.[160]

He proceeds to indicate the material benefits people derived from the canal in several poems:

Our caliph has been given through the energy of Khalid a stream which flows to his credit over other rivers, and surely al-Mubarak (blessed) as its name indicates irrigates lands producing stable food and lofty date-palms, When al-Mubarak reached maximum flood food became cheap for purveyors and merchants.[161]

1. Far., ii, 248-250; cf. also ii, 121-122.
2. Far., i, 296; cf. i, 270.
3. Ibid., i, 269; cf. i, 132-133.
In addressing Hishām he claims that he was wrongfully arrested only because of his prestige and glorious lineage. After imploring the caliph to release him, reminding him of the protection offered him earlier by his grandfather Marwan, he says:

If I am detained without any crime [it is no stranger than that] they arrested me when I had been feeling secure, dreading naught, in fact they have imprisoned me only because I am the son of Ghalib and because I am one of the excellent nobles not of the rabble, and because I am the one whom Tamīm used to rely upon in frontiers facing abodes of assailing enemies, and because I am the spokesman of Khindif against their detractors, [pursuing my task] as a wealthy noble, fond of calamities, seeking his revenge.[162]2

After recounting his victories against his detractors, he goes on to stress his precarious position, indicating his many enemies:

I perceive people who are poets, other than myself, as though they are the tame pigeons resident at Mecca, I wonder at a group of people who are ready with their apologies when they see me, and who when I am absent either inform against me or do me wrong, whereas they used to fear my assault when the overflowing eyes stopped shedding their tears through me, had I feared that Khalid would frighten me I would have flown with a perfect wing, the feathers of which are not broken, as I had flown from the two misrs of Ziyād when he had gnashed his canine teeth against me with calamities, never had I feared the prospect of being seen in a gaol, short of step, walking as a fettered man, spending the night with the bell-carrying Indians circling around me, some of them guarding me as closely as if bound to me by a covenant.[163]3

---

1. cf. Ibid., ii, 7-10; cf. i, 61; ii, 188-189.
2. Par., ii, 10.
3. Ibid., ii, 11; cf. also i, 140-141; ii, 284.
The real significance of the various anecdotes related by the sources in connection with al-Farazdaq’s imprisonment and release - some of which are evidently apocryphal - lies primarily in the way they underlined the entrenchment of state control and the marked inability of local tribal support to stand against it without the help of the larger groups.

Al-Farazdaq discovered that appeal to blood-relationship was of no avail and he made this clear when he lampooned Ayyūb ibn-‘Īsā of Dabba - Dabba being the poet's maternal uncles - the agent of Malik who actually arrested him:

Had you been a Qaysī you would not have detained me, but [you are] a negro with thick lips,
I reminded him of the blood-relationship that existed between us, but I realized that his [favourable] commands were remote from me,
And I said [perhaps] he was one of Dabba family, but the colour of his buttocks and the orbit of his eye asserted that he belonged to others,
The Nubian shall see what his hands have initiated when the diffused verses of poetry are recited.[164]  

The betrayal of his tribe was rudely pointed out to him by the poet Salama ibn-‘Ayyāsh who had met him in prison. On being abused by al-Farazdaq who slandered his base origin, Salama told the Tamīmī poet: "The basest men are the Banū-Mujāshi. You are their poet, their chief, and the son of their leader and none of them raised a finger in your defence when the police of Malik confined you in prison." The fact that his patience with his tribe Tamīm wore thin was made out in his appeal to the Kalbi dignitary Sa‘īd ibn-al-Walīd al-Abrash  

3. Ibid., xxi, 131; cf. ibid., xix, 16-17; Ibn-Sall., 287.
when he told him:—

To al-Abrash of Kalb, I have referred for his support a request which the two tribes of Tamīm and Wa'il treated with indifference.\[165]\(^1\)

His main hope of protection was Qays despite his earlier hostility to them. He is reported to have sent his son to Syria telling him, "Enlist the support of the Qaysīs and let not my satires against them deter you from approaching them because they will certainly show their indignation on your behalf."\(^2\)

By this time Qays and Ṭuḏar were at one against the Yemen, and the story proceeds to relate that Qays told the caliph, "Whenever there emerged among Ṭuḏar a gallant warrior, a poet or a leader Khalīd would jump on and imprison him."\(^3\) Their intercession brought about his speedy release and he sang their praise in a number of poems.\(^4\)

This unity of purpose manifested itself further in the attitude of the poet's rival, Jarīr who appealed passionately to Khalīd in a long poem\(^5\) requesting his release. When the news of the poet's imprisonment reached Hishām the caliph jubilantly told Jarīr, "God has disgraced the transgressor." On being told that the transgressor in question was al-Farazdaq Jarīr promptly replied, "O commander of believers, if you desire to bestow any favour on the settled communities of Ṭuḏar and their Bedouins then release for them their poet [who is also] their leader and the son of their leader." The

1. Ibn-Sall., 296; \textit{Agh.}, xix, 24.
2. Ibn-Sall., 295.
3. Ibid.
4. cf. Far., ii, 202; \textit{Agh.}, xix, 25.
5. cf. Jar., 139-140; \textit{Nag.}, 985. A number of Farazdaq's verses are interposed in it; cf. Far., i, 132-133.
surprised caliph said, "Are you not pleased that al-Farazdaq
is disgraced?" Jarīr replied, "No, by God 0 commander of
believers, unless he is disgraced through my own tongue."
Hishām reflected thoughtfully, "What a man is he concerning
his lineage (ḥasab)!" ¹

iii. POETS AS PUBLIC CONSCIENCE

The role of poets as spokesmen of their people and
defenders of their honour looms large in the verses and
activities of Basrī poets. Although this role was in many
cases inflated out of all proportions for considerations of
prestige and mere boasting, many poets lived up to their
image by identifying themselves with their people in times of
adversities. A considerable portion of encomiums addressed
to caliphs or their governors was not mere flattery to secure
material gain - though the importance of this was never in
doubt - but embodied a wide range of critical views deprecating
malpractices and calling attention to corruption. The
spectacles of appalling poverty and hardship to which people
were often exposed in the wake of droughts and other natural
disasters found pride of place in many eulogies. Jarīr tells
al-Ḥajjāj at the end of a poem celebrating his victory over
Ibn-al-Ash‘ath:-

¹ Nag., 984-5.
Should we not complain to you of a period of drought, and of drinking water at the time of snowing?
And of the household’s wrangle, while starving, over the milk of a milch camel that ceases not in winter?
[It was] a time rendering maidens black, whereas even their eyes had not at any time been black. [l66]

But it is during the latter days of al-Ḥajjāj and more so after his death that poets elaborate on these themes. In a passionate poem addressed to al-Walīd I at the end of which the poet seeks refuge with the caliph from al-Ḥajjāj, al-Farazdaq portrays the depressing situation of the various tribes of Muṣar:-

When they saw me drive my riding-beast they called out to me with the voice of a perishing group of travellers whose womenfolk were starving,
Saying: "Rescue us, when you approach, through calling [attention to our plight] in the presence of the best of men [whom] you are visiting."
And I told them: "If God brings me and my she-camel safely [to the caliph] I shall give information as to what I know,
Of how I saw the wolf every day assailing your emaciated [camels] evening and morning,
To drag away, if they lay exposed to him, some of the camel corpses you set as enclosure around you,
Relieve Muṣar for lean years have come successively over them, striking with blows that fracture bones,
Whereas all the other Maʿaddi tribes reside close to fertile lands, the vaulted bridges of which are not barred to them,
They (i.e. Muṣar) remain where starvation alighted in the region between Tihama and Khaybar and the valley wherein hunger is ever present,
While Tamīm alighted at their Dahna’ desert, taking refuge in a fertile land producing huge quantities of good quality dates,
Looking to the one seeking provision among them as though they are Bactrian camels owned by a camel-driver whose huge camels are lean in the flank,
And had ‘Abs not been fighting they would have been stricken with misfortune on account of hunger rendering the afflicted sleepless,

2. Corpses of perished camels were strung as enclosure to ward off wolves from the living herds.
But, in any case, they compel their enemy [to submission] when spear-heads are shaken by mischief-makers.

Rescue me on account of my standing among Nizār and my coming forth [to you] because I am the noble one of the two easts (i.e. Basra and Kufa or Iraq and Khurasan) and their poet.[167]

Things must have become unbearable when Sulaymān acceded to the Umayyad throne (96/715). Al-Farazdaq adopted the rare practice of starting one, perhaps the earliest, of his major panegyrics on Sulaymān with a vivid description of the lamentable condition of the people as it was reflected in their womenfolk. After a few lines on the general theme of misery he makes his wife Nawār ask him:-

Can't you see that [the women] around your abode seeking refuge in your honour are at the limit of their resources? And how could you desire easy life after what you have seen at Najd of poverty-stricken men and women? And many a blackened woman wearing the patched garments of orphans came forth leading them and asking about us, Carrying two of them on the shoulders, violently shaking, so lean they almost break, And behind her [are] two daughters, clinging to her shreds; evil is her condition! Bound to her waist there followed a dishevelled young she-camel pierced at the nostrils, barely a year since weaned, She fell down - throwing them to us, as though she was a female ostrich at the time of drought with her young ones at her side - At an enclosure encompassing many a tent and pavilion seething with starving men and children.[168]

These conditions seemed to have persisted until the time of 'Umar II judging by the passionate appeals by both al-Farazdaq and Jarīr. Jarīr told him:

1. Far., i, 248-250; cf. also, ii, 126.
2. Ibid., ii, 72; cf. i, 263, 266; Jar., 347.
Shall I mention the distress and pressure of calamity that has befallen us or shall what has reached you of my news suffice for me? I have been constantly since leaving you, in an abode that continued to emaciate me, while the tribe became tired of my journeys to and fro, The distressed urban dweller is of no avail to his Bedouin counterpart, nor is the Bedouin capable of returning [any good] to the urban dweller, At feast-times many a dishevelled widow and many an orphan weak of voice and vision, Cry out to you with broken hearts, as though they are afflicted with demonic evil or amulet magic, Each reckoning on you to compensate him for the loss of his father, being like a chick in the nest, unable to walk or fly, Their merchants expect you hopefully, as they expect rain, may you be blessed as a healer of broken bones, If you abandon them whom would they hope for after you? But if you rescue them from it you will have rescued them from real misfortune.[169]^~

In addition to the ravage of natural disasters the ferocity of extortion and administrative highhandedness accentuated the general spirit of resentment in town and desert, and furnished poets with worthy causes which were skilfully exploited by many of them. In certain respects conditions of life, especially in the case of Bedouins remaining in their desert, were worse than they had been before. Islam prohibited their previous practices of raiding and plundering which ensured in certain cases the livelihood of the poorer tribes. In addition it imposed on them the poor-tax, zakat, which was a source of resentment as the ridda wars had revealed, and a heavy burden of which their poets consistently complained.

Government agents, especially the tax-collectors and the police were the obvious targets of censure, even by the emirs

themselves as Ziyād indicated when he was told about the man in charge of Baṣra police. His comment on him was the line:-

Many a tax-gatherer slanders [his people] to the governor, and many a one against whom people guard themselves is a guardian over them.[170]

The notorious practice of administrators to enrich themselves through stealing and acquiring public funds was pilloried by either Abū-'l-Aswad2 or Anas ibn-Abī-Unās3 when Ḥarīṭha ibn-Badr the Tamīmī poet was appointed by 'Ubaydallāh ibn-Ziyād an emir over Surraq. The poet admonished the emir sarcastically:-

O Ḥarīṭha ibn-Badr! You have been appointed an emir over a region, so be therein a large rat that deceives and steals,
And despise nothing that you may acquire, for your share of the whole domain of Iraq is but Surraq,
For men are either regarded as liars, talking according to their whims, or taken as truthful,
They tell stories based on conjecture and uncertainty, and when asked to substantiate them they fail to do so,
And falter not in your endeavours, for sluggishness is the slowest vehicle, and [know that] not all who are invited to [get] sustenance receive it,
And vie with Tamīm in wealth, for wealth has a tongue through the aid of which the inarticulate achieves power and articulation.[171]

Ḥarīṭha took the advice as the accepted norm and is reported to have replied:-

May the sovereign of mankind requite you with His highest reward, for you have uttered a gracious speech and offered a satisfying advice,
You have commanded [the pursuit of] a firm course [of action] and had you commanded otherwise you would have found me disobeying your view.[172]

The atrocities of tax-collectors were portrayed vividly by ar-Ra‘ī when he addressed ‘Abd-al-Malik:-

O caliph of the Compassionate! We are an upright Muslim people who prostrate ourselves at daybreak and sunset, Being Arabs who recognize as due to God in our property the obligation of the zakat by divine revelation. The tax-collectors have disregarded your instructions and committed, if you only knew them, abominations and monstrosities,

They seized the local government agent and split apart the middle of his chest, whipping him with Ašbahi whips, he standing in fetters,

So that when they have left neither flesh on his bones nor power of understanding in his mind,

They brought their document and a humpbacked [man] whom whips have rendered faint-hearted, fear-stricken, Oblivious of honesty out of fear of pregnant and refractory whips that left his partner sore in the neck,

They have taken his beast of burden, leaving him seated [on the ground] unable to move away from his abode,

Calling out to the Commander of believers, but parted from him by a desert vehemently swept by winds,

Like a hoopoe, its wing broken by hunters cooing for its chick on the road of ash-Shurayf,

So remove from us injustices that impaired the feeding of our children and rescue our devoured limbs,

For [otherwise], if I remain alive, I shall certainly induce my people to undertake a journey that renders taxable camels scarce at ash-Shurayf.[173]

The last line betrayed the impatience and desperation of the poet. The caliph viewed it as a flagrant act of rebellion when he snapped at him, "Whereto [would you escape] from God and the sultan, mayst thou have no mother?". The poet had to retreat by saying, "From one governor to another, and from one

1. Agh., xxii, 33; cf. ibid., 30 for the lines of ‘Alqama ibn-Ma‘bad on the ill practices of this emir.
2. cf. Chapter I, p. 25 above for ‘arīf.
tax-collector to another," but he was dismissed without any redress. The following year the same poet approached the caliph and recited:-

As for the destitute whose milch camel sufficed only for the household, nothing was left over for him,
And the camel owners were upset, while men of wealth retained, in the face of rough treatment, only handfuls of their wealth,
So if you pay attention to them you will revive them, but if they encounter the like of it in the following year they will become depraved.[174]²

The caliph deemed him more prudent than he had been the previous time³ and asked him what request he had to make, thereupon the poet said, "Refund to them their poor-rates (sadaqāt) in order to revive them."⁴

Other sinister practices of tax-collectors were revealed by al-Farazdaq when he complained to al-Walīd I saying:-

The two easts looked to you every captive, widow and frontier force,
Since you have promulgated a decree for governors wherein safeguards against dissoluteness were stipulated,
O commander of believers, the fairness of whose hands cures the maladies of breasts,
How does this [tally] with a governor who, in collecting taxes, imposes upon us the [delivery of] dirhams at times of full moons,
And wherefrom [can we obtain] dirhams as inaccessible to us as the star Sirius to the one raising his palms to reach it?
When we lead to him the stipulated number of animals he rejects them, turning away from both the young goat and the camel,
When he puts the whips forward to us in daytime we purchase by means of usury pieces of silk,

1. Ibn-Sall., 442.
2. Ibid.
3. Ibid.
Thus the usury to which we have resorted to protect our backs, has brought us into Hell-fire, Would that the caliph heard the voice of a caller invoking God, crying, "Will there ever be a protector for me?"
And the voices of women bound together with their children on their laps,
Then would they have been answered by the tongue of one who calls to God's religion, one zealous and helpful. [175]

The same poet drew another list of complaints and put them forward to Sulayman when he said:-

You have been put to the test with regard to what you promised if you ever became in command over us,
Many a vow have we made if you exercise authority over us,
Such as performing pilgrimage by a bare-footed woman or fasting for two years by another, the mother of scanty-haired weaklings,
Of whom nothing has remained but tongues, weak bones and red bellies,
And without stipend they station in hostile territory longer than can be endured the troops they dispatch over land and sea,
And they impose [taxes] on camels long dead and done with,
So that we envied every one borne on a bier whose corpse was carried to the grave,
And the living wished that they were beneath the earth and that the Day of Resurrection was in sight,
I swear by camels ambling with all kinds of devout supplicants from the ravines of dusty and far-extending valleys,
That I have uttered nothing but the truth which you recognize in improvised speech or verse,
The land of Iraq has been denuded of all its wealth.[176]

The methods of torture employed and the corruption of government officials were dwalt upon by poets. The use of the whip to produce the desired effect became common as as-şaltan al-'Abdī noted:-

1. Far., i, 285-286; cf. also ibid., i, 191 for complaints about taxes and shortage of money especially in the bādiya.
2. Far., i, 262-263.
I behold a people that have unsheathed their sword and
to their whip was added the Asbaḥī brand.[177]¹

The wide use of bribes which resulted in miscarriages of
justice was pointed out by al-Farazdaq in one of his poems on
al-Ḥajjāj:—

We were living in a land, 0 son of Yusuf, where no
governor minded what bribe he received,
Deeming, when the two opposing parties approach him,
those who offer bribe more entitled to legal claim,
But objects of desire are not sought with you through
bribes, being only fulfilled according to what is
recorded in documents.[178]²

Corruption seemed to have become so widespread that even those
in charge of public watering-places exacted their unlawful
toll on those who approached them, judging from the lines of
al-Farazdaq:—

May God curse a watering-place over which Ḥanbal - the
back of a female lizard firmly entrenched beneath a
rock - is in charge,
Whenever you come to the water walk stealthily to Ḥanbal
with a wooden cup containing gruel of parched barley
or flour,
May I seek hospitality among wayfarers away from a person
who drinks [water] from water-vessels and fills up
wells with earth,
Had al-Ḥajjāj known your case, your right hand would
never have sold water to a Muslim in exchange for a
precious [reward],
Instead you would have attempted mutilating [your body]
or would have been found crippled, crawling like
Ibn-Waḍīn.[179]³

Al-ʻAjjāj echoed the same sentiments when he told Sulaymān:—

Many an agent of the imām, carries out his activities
blindly, heedless as to guidance,
In that they were able to drive people mad, distressing
their emirs by violating,

1. Mub., Kamīl, ii, 246; the second hemistich may also be
rendered: who has their Asbaḥī whip lengthened.
3. Far., ii, 343.
That which is inviolable by divine command, and when they
find a weak person they demand a bribe,
and when he refuses to pay it he is tied and fettered
with many folds,
Those are said to be governors; how evil are they as
governors, not excepting any among them,
All of them, however long they may stay in office, are
deaf-hearted, eating of what virtuous men loathe,
Loving it with the passion of the pack of hounds [when
they hear] the sounding bridles [of chasing horses],
carrying within themselves an honesty like a sieve,
Thus people were reduced [to poverty] after having
enjoyed easy life, like a garment reduced to shreds
after having been new.[180]

The conduct of emirs was also exposed in unequivocal
terms. Al-‘Ajjāj blamed them for precipitating social
dissolution when he said:-

Many an emir who has spread corruption, causing mischief
thereby, augmented disorder and confusion by treating
people tyrannically.[181]

Certain emirs were particularly noted for the invectives
levelled against them by poets. The atrocities committed by
‘Ubaydallāh ibn-Ziyād were listed by Ibn-Mufarrigh3 whose
personal hatred for this emir renders his testimony suspect.
Al-Ḥārith al-Qubā‘ was the target of attacks from various
poets. Murra ibn-Maḥkān told him once, before being
sentenced by him:-

0 Ḥārith act with deliberation in passing your judgement,
for when an Ṣūrālī deviates from fairness in his
sentence, he hits and kills on the spot,
Your responsibility is solely the passing of judgement,
so maintain [fairness], since whatever you acquire
today, you will achieve success thereby tomorrow,
As for myself I achieve my aims through patience and
the breaking of the sword inside the emir’s head.[182]

1. ‘Ajj., 53.
2. Ibid., 75; cf. ‘Iqd, vii, 305; Kāmil, vi, 46 for other
cases.
4. Ibid., xix, 10.
It seemed that al-Qubā‘s reply to him was a severe beating which the poet bitterly lamented in his poetry. He paid with his life later at the hands of Mus‘ab for uttering such defiant lines. But the most memorable verses which summed up the career of al-Qubā‘ in the view of a contemporary poet, were those of Abū-‘l-Aswad addressed to ‘Abdallāh ibn-az-Zubayr:

O commander of believers, may you be rewarded with goodness, relieve us of the Quba’ of Banu-al-Mughīra, We tested him and found him blameworthy, baffling all our endeavours at securing his co-operation, And he is, in addition, fond of marrying and eating, given to venturing [on people’s homes], resourceful of ways and means.[183]

The extravagance of Mus‘ab, as especially displayed in the dowry he paid to ‘Ā’isha, the daughter of Ṭalḥa, which is said to have amounted to a million dirhams, drew sharp comments from Anas ibn-Abī-Unās, also addressing the anti-caliph ‘Abdallāh ibn-az-Zubayr:

Convey to the commander of believers a message from a disinterested adviser, not seeking material benefits, The dowry of a maiden [is paid] a thousand thousand full dirhams while the army commanders spend their night in hunger, Were it that al-Farūq (i.e. ‘Umar I) was informed of what I have witnessed and seen, he would have, I imagine, been horrified.[184]

When ‘Abdallāh withdrew Mus‘ab temporarily in favour of his own son Ḥamza who became the governor of Baṣra, he reversed the liberal policy of his uncle Mus‘ab and imposed very strict measures regarding the allocation of public funds. This

3. Aswad, 220-221; Bayān, i, 169, cf. 122.
4. Ansāb, v, 282.
5. Ibid., 283; Agh., i11, 122-123; Ibn-Qut., Sh., i1, 714.
6. Agh., i11, 123.
Infuriated the public figures of Basra and resulted in his dismissal forcibly by Malik ibn-Misma' of Bakr, an occasion celebrated by al-'Udayl ibn-al-Farkh in his praise of Malik, which throws light on the strength of some tribal leaders especially when weak emirs confronted them:—

Whenever we suspect that an emir is contemplating a foul act, we call out to Abu-Ghassan (i.e. Malik) who will form an encampment [with troops],

Whenever Abu-Ghassan is refused his demand, he strives to assume command.[185]1

1. Ansāb, v, 265; Agh., xx, 17; Naq., 1090.
CHAPTER V

POETRY AND SOCIAL CHANGE

The divergent social forces which impinged on Başrî life,¹ and helped to give it what shape it ultimately took, were bound to leave their marks on the production of poets whose lives were influenced in varying degrees by these forces. At the outset and before embarking on tracing these marks it is appropriate to call attention here to an error - reflected in many works by modern Arab writers - which a literary historian is sometimes exposed when discussing the impact of social change on poetry or on literature as a whole. Instead of viewing the entire career of the poet as reflected in his poetry as a whole, considering all the divergent, and sometimes contradictory currents as integral parts of his character, which is the product of his social environment, and then instead of relating the various streaks which stand out conspicuously in his production to the life of society in which he lived, certain themes, which may admittedly be predominant in his production, are singled out and regarded as representing the whole character of the poet. If this dominant feature does not accord with new developments known to have occurred in the society the poet is then dismissed accordingly as someone belonging to an age other than his own. It is in this manner that the majority of Başrî poets in the Umayyad period are represented as the

¹. cf. Chapter I, pp.26-55.
upholders of Jahili tradition in life, and imitators of Jahili style in poetry. The fact is that their depiction of Jahili ideals, conspicuous in their poetry as that may be, was only a part of their poetic career, and reflected at that a living element of Basri society. This element was predominant in their poetry not because of a nostalgic desire on their part to cling to ideals of a vanished antiquity that, though revered, was no longer experienced, but rather because it was a living part of their daily experience, and a very intense one at that. Separating this element, and consequently the poets expressing it, from the welter of Basri life, and branding them as Jahili or continuing the Jahili tradition, which is viewed as something divorced from the life of their community, results only in distorting the nature of this poetry and the image of life it purported to convey. It is more proper that we should start from the proposition that those poets, even when they echoed Jahili ideals in their most outspoken forms, were not in fact echoing ideals of an extinct society, but rather those of their own community.

In dealing with the social content of this poetry it is also important to make allowance for the fact that poets vary in their awareness of the problems besetting their society. They perceive and react differently to dominant social and political currents. But despite the apparent conventionalism in theme and form which mark the production of most poets with whom we are concerned in this study, it is a gross misrepresentation of poetic talent to dismiss whatever insights or remarks
they make concerning their social milieu, as something unintentional or subsidiary to the major theme, be it elegy, eulogy, censure or the like. At the same time we must resist the temptation to credit them, or some of them, with a virtue that is not theirs. It is futile to look in their poetry for a definitive or a consistent outlook which may be loosely regarded as constituting some kind of a systematic social or political philosophy. All that we can hope for is a collection of diverse reflections indicating the responses and reactions of poets to the different forces at work in their environment. Yet although we cannot delineate any systematic outlook in any one individual poet, we can nevertheless draw a fairly coherent picture of the social environment by considering what those poets as a whole had to say in this respect.

i. ISLAM VERSUS JĀHILĪ CUSTOMS

The pattern we find in Baṣrī society was such as may be found in many others which are subject to rapid growth. A kind of equilibrium was maintained between the old order and the new. The degree to which both systems co-existed in an uneasy balance - ever tilting in favour of the new - was determined by the relative potential of each to meet new demands and to suit new conditions of life. But on the whole social habits died hard, while new ideals took a long time to seep into the unconscious mind of the community, and the balance
had sometimes to be maintained by exerting pressure, since those in authority usually represented the new order. Baṣrī society is an apt demonstration of this process. Although the major features of Islam as a religion were, on the whole, tenaciously upheld by the Community, yet on the social level, more often than not, the Islamic veneer only disguised deep-seated Jāhili sentiments that often erupted into prominence with the weakening or removal of state authority. While it is exceedingly difficult to assess accurately the degree of ultimate fusion of elements whereby the stark Jāhili practices, very conspicuous at the outset, were gradually modified or superseded by Islamic practices, it is safe to assume that the process was an evolutionary one resulting, by the end of our period, in Baṣrī society reaching the stage where the ultimate social equilibrium was approached.

1. Jāhili features:

The stronghold that Jāhili practices exercised on the minds of Baṣrīs whether in the ḍīlī or its bādiya is indicated by numerous events the echoes of which found their way into the compositions of various poets. The intention, however, is not to furnish a comprehensive register of all that had taken place, but rather to indicate trends and to delineate prominent features. The outward observance of religious duties apart, the general attitude seemed to have been to accommodate Islam itself to the inherited structure of Arabian life. Islam as a political system with its
various institutions such as prophethood, caliphate and the like were eventually exploited as mere instruments of tribal glory. Thus in enumerating the past glories of tribes or individuals in the Jahiliyya, Islam is sometimes appended as just another item of praise. The bond of blood-relation upon which the Jahili system rested and which Islam attempted to supersede by substituting faith for it, is celebrated in many compositions. The Prophet himself features prominently in many of them. Jarīr, in expounding the merits of his people portrays the Prophet, who should belong equally to all Muslims, as belonging solely to them:

To us belong the Prophet's watering-trough with its two water-carriers, and also the one who inherited prophethood and the Book,

And from us was the one whose duty was to allow the congregating pilgrims to pass from 'Arafat to Muzdalifa and the one who gains mastery over you in discourse when you address him.[186]

While al-Farazdaq, in lampooning al-Muhallab, says:-

From us is the Prophet of God reciting His Book by means of which its (i.e. Arabia's) idols and Jews were subdued,

There remains not one tribe - whether of those who turn to the qibla or otherwise but is subject to Quraysh's leadership.[187]

In the same vein al-Faraqdaq represented the sanctuaries of Mecca as being the property of his own tribal group to the exclusion of other people when he said:-

To us belong the two holy mosques of God, as does guidance; while the most illustrious of names has become our lot,

1. Naq., 450.
2. Far., i, 159; cf. also i, 282, 283, 322; ii, 36; cf. Naq., 912, 913.
Excepting [that of] God, since nothing resembles God, for Whom all ancient peoples are resurrected. As for the imam of guidance whose light was intended for the broad earth, how many a forefather or brother, he has [amongst us].[188]

The power of Islam was further conceived as the power of the reigning tribal group, which had produced earlier the Prophet and then the caliph. In satirizing at-Ṭirimmāḥ of Ṭayyi', al-Farazdaq said:-

None was left but he who paid to us his zakāt (poor-rates) or who remitted the jizya (poll-tax) when it fell due.[189]

The caliph, whose official title was 'commander of believers', came to be narrowly identified with the tribal group. Jarīr taunted al-Akḥṭal and his kin:-

There, at Damascus, my cousin resides as a caliph; had I desired it, he would have driven you to me as slaves,[190]

to which boasting the caliph is reported to have said, "What he has said amounted to making me no more than a policeman. Had he said, 'had he desired it', I would have driven them to him."[4]

In all probability the remark reflected no more than the opinion of contemporary critics on how to address the caliph. Putting it into the caliph's mouth helps to underline the general atmosphere especially at the beginning of the Umayyad period when tribal affinity was held, especially in the court, in high esteem. This conception permeated the compositions of most poets of the larger group of Muḍar

---

1. Far., i, 368; Nac., 529; cf. 571.
2. Far., i, 115.
and the more restricted group of Khindif from whom Quraysh originated.

There is furthermore, as we have seen earlier, a marked tendency to equate "Islam" with the temporal authority of the state. The term recurs in this context in the majority of compositions devoted to insurrections against Umayyad rule. On the occasion of the defeat of Ibn-al-Muhallab, al-Farazdaq told Yazīd II (101-105/720-724):-

Islam has never found after Muḥammad and his companions a guardian of the faith who resembles you,
I perceive that God has caused your might to overwhelm that of your opponents through Islam and [His] succour,

So that your swords have spared none who deviated from Islam behind me at the two market-places.[191]

The same poet represents his tribe Tamīm as the bulwark of Islam in this sense when he addressed Hishām:-

[They are] the mainstay of the bonds of Islam and the upholders of all authority; is there any obedience of which Tamīm is not the mainstay?
Have there not been formed in Islam, from you and us, formidable barriers hard to surmount?[192]

Hilal ibn-Aḥwaz, the Tamīmī commander responsible for the defeat of the Muhallabids, is, frequently praised by this poet in a manner making the identification of Umayyad authority with Islam clear:

Ibn-Aḥwaz straightens the staff of Islam amongst us when the staff of Islam proves soft at the knots. [193]

3. Ibid., ii, 242.
4. Far., i, 56.
On another occasion he says of the same commander:-

I swear by my life that Ibn-Ahwaz has certainly led [his troops] with such skill as paved every road for Islam.[194]¹

The Muhallabids and their allies, although not known for any religious deviation, were attacked, as we have seen earlier,² as heretics. Hilāl who defeated them is further invested with the qualities of a champion of Islam:-

He relieves with his lances the effect of anyone who initiates a course (or faith) deviating from the Furqān (i.e. the divider between right and wrong, the Qurʾān) and traditions.[195]³

The Banū-Bakr who allied themselves to the Muhallabids are addressed by the same poet:-

Would the Bakr ibn-’il-Wā’il follow idols after they have accepted Islam and performed prayers for ninety years?[196]⁴

Such remarks and many others to the same effect⁵ which poets assiduously stressed do not go beyond underlining the fact of the religious basis of the caliphate. They might perhaps be taken in the main as political slogans designed to woo people and enlist their support for the Umayyad cause. It is hazardous to take them at their face value and regard them as a veritable pointer to the degree that Islam as a religion and as a social system permeated the life of community.

But by the same token it is equally unrealistic to dismiss them

1. Ibid., ii, 36.
2. cf. Chapter IV, p.158.
4. Far., i, 112.
5. cf. Chapter IV, pp.155-159.
offhand as unrepresentative on that score alone, for slogans that do not strike a popular note and appeal to certain sentiments in the people addressed are unrewarding gimmicks in the game of politics. Appeal to religion was the surest way of achieving political ambition. That was the reason why all political parties, be they Umayyad, Shīʿī, Khārījī and the like based their claims on religious foundations, since the whole idea of state authority and the community it purported to control issued from the religion of Islam and its community, the jāmāʿa. This conception which equates faith with submission to the caliph and renders obedience to him obligatory, as we have seen earlier, was bitterly contested by some Khārījīs judging by the words of ‘Ubayda ibn-Hilāl when he contrasted the stand of his own party with that of their opponents:

We never say: The immunity of our faith in any conceivable case rests on obedience to Mus‘ab,
But we say: Judgement belongs to God alone, and we are content with God and His favoured Prophet.[197]

Politics and authority apart, it is quite easy to detect many layers of alien elements conflicting with this general framework of 'Islam'. The glories of the Jahiliyya were always present in poets' minds and were frequently mentioned in the same breath with those of Islam. In praising the tribe of 'Ijl for generosity and war, al-Farazdaq said:

Both (generosity and courage in war) are among the loftiest of merits, set apart among people in Polytheism and Islam.[198]

1. Khaw., 56.
2. Far., ii, 220.
When he praised the family of Malik ibn-al-Mundhir, the security officer of Khalid al-Qasrī in Basra, the same poet said:-

To their credit are two things: the glory of the Jahiliyya and [the fact] that they submitted themselves to God before other people.\(^1\)

References to the Jahiliyya and its practices were made quite freely as when Jarīr satirizing the tribe of Taym, said:-

Never had the Taymī excelled in his Jahili times in his companionship of the powerful [monarch] while drinking reclining over cushions.\(^2\) 

In attempting to deny Arab origin to the Nuhallabids al-Farazdaq went out of his way to mention the idols and Jahili religious practices, representing them as the mark of a true Arab:-

Beards of Nabataeans conceal noses that had no Arab origin, and tongues that were never arabicised,
And how [could they be otherwise] since they neither attended a place of pilgrimage at Mecca, nor worshipped the idols at al-Muḥassab (i.e. site where pebbles are thrown),
And never did the crier call at dawn that they might ride to war - except on bolted boats,
And never did an Azdī woman suffer pain on account of circumcision, nor did she drink milk from a leathern vessel,
Nor was she provided with eggs and gathered fruits by hunters who visited her consecutively; nor did she eat of the share of the she-camel slaughtered for gambling.\(^3\)

On another occasion he told them:-

And how [can you be Arabs] whereas your father never led a horse, or carried his sons to the idol Duwar,
Nor worshipped Yaghuth, nor did he observe what Ḥimyar or Nizar worshipped,
Certainly the Azd of Başra do not prostrate themselves to God, but rather they bow down at every burning fire.\(^4\)

\(^1\) Ibid., ii, 250.
\(^2\) Jar., 317.
\(^3\) Far., i, 16.
\(^4\) Ibid., i, 208.
The preponderance of Bedouins of the eastern flank of Arabia and the immense pressure they exerted on the life of Basra account for much of what Jahili elements we detect behind the Islamic veneer. It has been pointed out earlier that those Bedouins brought with them many of their tribal institutions and endeavoured to adapt them to their urban environment. Of these the institution of granting protection had ranked high among the virtues of pre-Islamic Arabs, and was tolerated at the beginning by Islam. In practice, however, it ran counter to effective control by the state whose duty it was to safeguard the rights of everyone irrespective of tribal origin. Therefore with the strengthening of state authority tribes and dignitaries fought shy of undertaking such a commitment even in the case of the nearest of kin against the formidable power of emirs, as many poets realized to their cost. But nonetheless the idea persisted, especially at times of crisis, and poets continued to attach great importance to it. Thus Jarîr makes a capital of the presumed betrayal by Muhîshi, al-Farazdaq's group, of az-Zubayr ibn-al-‘Awwâm when they granted him protection at the time of the Battle of the Camel but someone murdered him while he was in their protection. He once told them:

1. cf. Chapter I, p. 28 ff.
3. cf. Chapter IV, p. 171 above.
Owners of ships indulge in recounting reports of your treachery as do [riders of] she-camels, sunken of eyes, the girths of which run over Harran.

You grumbled at each other on the day when az-Zubayr was murdered as though you were hyenas the dung of which dried in a cave,

And had you been of us beasts and birds encountering none to chide them away, would never have shared [the corpse] of your protected neighbour.[203]

The idea features prominently in the naqa'ïd between the two Tamîmî poets.² Al-Farazdaq said concerning his adversary's clan:—

May God render the Banû-Kulayb hideous since they are capable neither of breaking faith nor of fulfilling a promise to a neighbour.[204]

But in boasting of his own folk he said:—

You perceive our neighbour grant protection [to others] among us, and even if he commits a crime he is free from blemish,

While our kinsman, however remote he be, safeguards his neighbour through us against what he dreads and abhors.[205]

In times of turmoil when state authority broke down people automatically reverted to the old practice, and even the emirs themselves had to avail themselves of the possibilities of protection offered by a strong tribe as did Ziyâd shortly before the death of ‘Alî when he sought refuge with the Azd,⁵ a course of action later followed by his son ‘Ubaydallāh in 65/685. The feat of the Aequality contrasted with the betrayal of Tamîm who allowed their patron Ibn-al-‘Hağramî to be burnt alive in 38/659⁶ by the

2. cf. Naq., 120, 699, 752, 762, etc.
3. Ibid., 329.
4. Ibid., 562.
6. cf. Chapter I, p.15 above.
Azdi poet, al-‘Arandas al-‘Awdhi, who boasted:–

We brought Ziyad back safely to his abode, while the one seeking refuge in Tamim went up as smoke.
May God curse a people who roasted their neighbour, failing to avert from him the heat of flames.[206]¹

But example of effective tribal protection (jiwar) occurred only when central authority was insecure. The practice was progressively muted by the universal ascendancy of state power. Extreme cases were at first not uncommon in the badiya; thus when Hilal ibn-al-As‘ar injured a protected neighbour (jar) of his cousins, they retaliated at the risk of their own lives;² but they gradually subsided.

An important corollary of it, clientship, however continued to play an important social role.³ The big claims made by tribal poets, especially Jarir and al-Farazdaq on this score do not represent so much an anachronism as a yearning for an ideal very close to Arab hearts but increasingly stifled by the rising tide of civil power. Actuated by such sentiments, al-Farazdaq went beyond mere verbal protestations to declare his father's tomb a sanctuary and a refuge, and made it an obligation upon himself, true to Jahili pattern, to assist whoever sought refuge in the tomb.⁴ This act became a fertile source of boasting for the poet who exploited it immensely in his rivalry with Jarir. He said once:–

My father and I guarantee protection to him who approaches me against the consequences of his crime, and neither of us is ever perfidious,

The decayed bones of Ghalib entertain guests with hundreds of camels readily provided by him, and he releases every convict. He is the one in whom refuge is sought, his bonds for the one seeking his protection being the firmest of bonds. [207]

The example set by al-Farazdaq in this respect exerted such a great influence on the mind of his contemporaries that one Thumama ibn-al-Walid took refuge in the tomb of the caliph Hisham ibn-‘Abd-al-Malik to avert the wrath of an Umayyad emir who however was not put off by the device and had him lashed to death. The reaction to this act was expressed by Abū-‘sh-Shaghb of 'Abs:-

O family of Marwan, treachery will never cease to overwhelm you until it brings you one day to your knees on a rough [stretch],

The tombs of the Banu-Harwan have become a water-closet in which refuge is not sought and about which the guardian does not care,

The Tamimi's tomb is better than your tombs since he has somebody among his people who strives to honour his pledge. [208]

Closely allied to the idea of jiwar, is that of confederation or alliance (hilf) between individuals and tribal groups which also served a vital security purpose especially in times of insurrection. It was indicated earlier that the regimentation of Basra into tribal blocks heightened tensions and speeded the outbreak of hostilities at such times. 3 The relationship between state authority and the formation of alliances was made out by al-Farazdaq

1. Naq., 910.  
when he derided the alliance between the Azd and Bakr saying:—

I swear by your life that the Azd can neither afford one to be in charge of authority nor can they straighten what has inclined of the state of affairs, Nor has authority (sultan) so forcefully banded them in one cause as to make Bakr ibn-Wa'il give their assent to this alliance.[209]

But it was precisely this removal of the sultan which made it incumbent upon Bakr to seek alliance even among the Azd in the face of Tamīm and the Muḍarī camp. This point was made by Haritha ibn-Badr al-Ghudānī when he said immediately after the death of Yazīd I:—

We discharged and appointed [rulers] while the Bakr ibn-Wa'il dragged their testicles seeking an ally.
No Bakrī ever spent the night and awoke in the morning without having known baseness.[210]

The struggle for the caliphate coupled with the general state of insecurity left the tribes in no doubt as to the wisdom of restoring all the Jahili alliances and giving them an Islamic veneer, as in the important alliance between Tamīm and the Yemenī tribe of Kalb which was renewed after the death of 'Uthmān. This hilf seemed to have survived for a long time even after the death of al-Farazdaq in 110/728, and was greatly hailed by the two Tamīmī poets. The Islamic bond was added to the hilf by al-Farazdaq when he said:—

Kalb and we are brothers between whom there exist bonds of contract, the strands of which are firmly twisted,
Both [are] allies on account of Islam and truth, their affairs culminating in fulfilment at the hands of Ibn-Sulaym.

We grant protection in the name of Kalb and they confirm our pledge while he of Kalb that grants protection does so in our name.[211]^1

The role of the bādiya in this respect is of no mean consequence. The relative freedom of Bedouins helped, as has been indicated earlier, the traditional life to linger on largely unaffected by recent changes. In many respects they persisted in their traditional ways undeterred by official restrictions which could not always be effectively imposed. The breakdown of authority often offered them the opportunity to practise their earlier predatory life. Raids and battles over watering-places and grazing grounds became common.2 The atmosphere of anarchy opened the door for violence and plunder. Al-Quḥayī al-ʻAnbarī of Tamīm praised his people for plundering, saying:-

A ransom for the people who killed Ḍasʿūd, plundered his new glittering weapons, fitted their helmets and clad themselves in iron![212]^3

The same idea was expressed by Wālid ibn-Khalīfa of Tamīm when he said on the flight of Ṭubaydallāh ibn-Ziyād:-

Off how many a tyrant immense of ambition have we taken crown and booty,
Such a one was Ṭubaydallāh whom we deprived of horse and weapons, and whose property we plundered.[213]^4

---

1. Par., i, 258-259.
4. Ṭab., ii, 456.
Changes in the Islamic practice apparently had to be enforced by the State, and they were revoked when the restraint was removed. Thus Ghālib, al-Farazdaq’s father brought back into slavery his ex-slave Suḥaym whom ‘Uthmān had freed earlier, immediately after the revolt against ‘Uthmān.¹ The decision of ‘Alī, forbidding the enslaving of a Muslim, was immediately set aside during the uprising of Ibn-az-Zubayr.² But blood-feuds were by far the most potent danger. These frequently broke anew whenever state power disappeared,³ and they cast their dark shadow over the miṣr itself. Some poets aroused sentiments by citing memorable cases of blood-revenge. The revenge exacted for the murder of Ibn-al-Qiṣāf by his brother was celebrated by al-Farazdaq when he said:—

Had you been like the brother of al-Qiṣāf and like his sword on the day of ash-Shibak, you would not have been given to flight,
When he struck the son of ‘Abla a memorable blow that grieved some and quenched the thirst of others for revenge,
Achieving thereby glory and emerging in the clothings of one neither impure nor incapable of revenge.[214]⁴

On several occasions this poet inflamed the passion of his people to take their revenge as when he urged them against the Banū-Afṣa who had murdered a certain Tamīmī:—

O people of Tamīm, how excellent is your mother! You have been confounded with a baffling disaster,
So put on the clothes of baseness, and acknowledge it if you fail to terrorise Banū-Afṣa with raids,

1. Naq., 417.
2. cf. Ibid., 717; cf. also p.237 n.4. below.
4. Naq., 918; cf. also Far., i, 122, 152; Rumma, 275, 491.
If you fail either to requite the murder of the hero of heroes by killing his murderer, or to die not single but as one. [215]

But violence breeds violence, and killing leads to more killing, as al-Farazdaq himself indicated:-

When you killed one of us, Khidāsh, driven by deep-seated rancour and hatred,
We killed Ziyad, al-Faṣil, Thabit; and ‘Abda was smitten by the sword after Jamil,
Thus, while you were boasting of murdering one person, five of your members paid with their lives for his.

Even those policemen in the service of government, whose official duties impose on them the thankless task of having to kill some rebel, could not avert being implicated in the welter of tribal revenge. The idea was expressed by the Tamīmī poet, Hurra ibn-Mahkān when Muṣ‘ab ibn-Khidāsh of Asad was on the point of killing him on the order of Muṣ‘ab ibn-az-Zubayr, the governor of Iraq. He told the Asadī policeman:-

O Banū-Asad, if you kill me you wage war against Tamīm when ever-recurring fighting intensifies. [216]

An earlier case in point which had tremendous repercussions and evoked much poetry was that of Hubayra ibn-Ḍamḍam of Mujāshi who was in the police service of Ziyād, or his son ‘Ubaydallāh. The gist of the episode is that the Banū-'l-Qa‘qa' of Tamīm murdered a member of Banū-Tuhayya as a reprisal for an earlier killing, whereupon the governor

2. Ibid., ii, 97.
3. Ṭab., ii, 803; Ansāb, iv, B, 163; Mub., Kamīl, ii, 247; 'Umda, i, 193.
directed the above Hubayra to pursue the Qa‘qā‘īs, who had taken flight. The pursuit ended in Hubayra killing one of the latter called ‘Amr, who is reported to have shown his intense horror for the police act in a rajaz he recited while he was in the pangs of death:

If you are ignorant [of me], then I know myself to be the large measure and brother of the small one (i.e. versatile),
Should I be killed for killing [the object] of my revenge?[218]

The act of Hubayra was severely condemned by al-Farazdaq who called on the murdered man's people to take their revenge. They, however, waited until anarchy set in after the flight of ‘Ubaydallāh from Baṣra, and exacted their revenge on one of Hubayra’s nephews, Mazād ibn-al-Aq‘as. The murder of this Mazād figured prominently in the poetry of Jarīr who took it as a sign of weakness on the part of Mujashi as they failed to avenge his death:

Have you not seen that the dogs of ‘Awf have not ceased dragging pieces of flesh among the dwellings of as-Sibaqayn?
But you returned in disgrace, your food being minced meat and flour, while the death echo [of Mazād] continued to call out to ‘Iqāl and Damādam;

Sometimes, even when state authority was established, a grieved family refused government aid and preferred to take

1. Naq., 79.
4. It was a myth among Arabs that when a person was murdered a bird called şada (echo) would emerge from his head and would continue to call out for revenge until its call was answered and only then would it be silent.
5. Naq., 78-82.
their revenge with their own hands as did the family of 'Abbād ibn-Akhḍar who had been murdered by the Khawārij. His brother told the soldiers, "Allow us to take our revenge with our own hands," and they fought their enemies until they exterminated them. The event was celebrated by al-Farazdaq in his lines:

In their endeavour to take their revenge, the Akhdar family are blameless when other avengers are blamed, For they unsheathed their swords when Ibn-Akhḍar was killed, achieving that beyond which no avenger could achieve, They retaliated for him by killing lion-like [warriors ] guided by long experience whenever they plunged into the middle of the fray.[220]

Lack of reliance upon authority (sultan) in this matter is praised by al-Farazdaq:

If you happen to be in an abode where you fear death, then be unyielding in your resolve as the Ghudani, Salim, Who gave himself up freely to death in pursuit of revenge, and died, accordingly, as a nobleman who loathed blameworthy acts, And when he perceived the state authority would not give him redress, he died in their presence with a sharp sword, Neither disturbed by consequences nor given to sleep, since a dedicated avenger never sleeps.[221]

Dhū-'r-Rumma told his adversaries:

Is it not becoming that you kill [the object of] your revenge as we killed your brother when we crushed his head with stones?[222]

When his enemies approached the emir, he told them triumphantly:

Though you kill me through the emir, yet then have I killed you forcibly without an emir.[223]

2. Far., ii, 222.
3. Rumma, 491.
4. Ibid., 275.
The Jahili practices relating to vengeance were often enacted to the letter. The daughter of Mas‘ūd al-‘Atakī, the Azdī leader whose murder at the hands of Tamīm precipitated the violent strife in Başra in the wake of Yazīd I’s death, when the news of her father’s death reached her, rode a saddled ass with her face towards its tail, her hair dishevelled, wearing a woollen cloth, shouting:

0 Mas‘ūd! Whom shall we kill for you?
0 Āḥnaf! We will not be appeased by accepting you!
0 Qafiz! We will not be content with killing you! [224] 2

Although they accepted blood-money, Mas‘ūd’s family exacted the amount payable under Jahili custom for the murder of a king and this was ten times what was prescribed by Islam. 3

But more often than not, following the Jahili pattern, the blood-money was rejected, since acceptance was regarded a sign of weakness. Al-Farazdaq expressed the reluctance of a contemporary of his, seeking to avenge his brother:

Don’t you see that we found aḥ-Dabīḥ exigeant regarding the requital of his brother’s death, it was as though we were, in our attempt to convince him, struggling with a snake on a mountain top that would not come down, Deaf, impervious to charms, seen by the sun but little, Intractable and difficult to gain his confidence; when we talk to him he refuses to answer back, Except to say: "The young she-camels paid as blood-money satisfy only the base man," And had they accepted blood-money for their revenge, we would have offered them a large-mouthed stallion of gentle nature. [225] 4

1. i.e. ‘Abdallāḥ ibn-‘Amir ibn-Kurayz.
3. Ibid., 117; Dīnawarī, Akhbar, 295.
The same poet was more forthright in condemning the acceptance of blood-money when he told Banū-Numayr who had lost one of their members called Jald:—

Answer the echo of Jald when it calls out to you with short-haired horses the riders of which rival them (i.e. the horses) [in stature],

Would your slaves kill you without any guilt [on your part] whereas there exist among you the highest and noblest men of 'Amir? Surely that which the bondsman loathes most (i.e. death) is more conducive to truth - its path being clear,

So accept from him neither camels that are purchased at a discount, nor black coins which are counterfeit,

Whereas if you kill [the murderer] with the axe, your murdered kinsman will be restored to life, otherwise killing with an axe is but a disgrace. [226]

On certain rare occasions poetry produced a salutary effect by taking the heat out of the protracted process of killing and counter-killing as in the aforementioned case of Banū-'l-Qiṣāf of Tamīm, whose kinsman Mas'ūd had been killed by a member of Banū-Taym-allah during the period following the murder of 'Uthmān. At a later date some of the Banū-'l-Qiṣāf lured away the killer and murdered him while he was in the protection of Banū-Ḥāritha. Those were greatly infuriated by the infringement of their pledge of protection. The vicious circle would have been set in motion but for the initiative of al-Aslā' ibn-al-Qiṣāf who was quick to compose a long poem presenting his people's case and adducing as his major argument the accepted practice among the Arabs of taking a life for a life. The poem was so convincing that the Banū-Ḥāritha felt gratified and said, "They are a people

1. Ibid., ii, 120.
2. cf. Nag., 921.
who took their legitimate revenge, and they have kinship with us, so we have no ill feeling against them."¹

Poetry also reflects a host of Jāhilī practices and notions concerning death and war. The custom of hamstringing a horse, or a she-camel, at the tomb of a celebrated man, was upheld by al-Farazdaq more than once. He is reported to have performed this ritual over the tomb of Bishr ibn-Marwān, the governor of Iraq (74/694), addressing the deceased:

I have sworn to him that never after him shall I ride a horse perfect of tendons, without hamstringing it on the tomb.[227]²

He did the same thing over the tomb of al-Hudhayl, telling his people:

Who will tell the men of Taghlib that I have hamstrung [a she-camel] at the tomb of al-Hudhayl that he might be remembered.[228]³

Lip service was paid to the practice by Jarīr, when he said in an elegy on Qays ibn-Dirār:

Qays is certainly deserving that the inviolate enclosure should be declared violate for him, and that the prominent-cheeked she-camel should be hamstrung [at his tomb] when the travelling provisions it carried became light.[229]⁴

Some of the excesses of the Jāhilīyya were often given free reign especially in war. The mutilation and maiming of the dead enemy prohibited by Islam, continued to be practised. Al-Farazdaq described the grotesque sight of the vanquished 'Umayr ibn-al-Ḥubab and his allies:

---

¹ Ibid.
² Ansab, v, 179.
³ Far., i, 289.
⁴ Jar., 91.
The testicles and the head of Ibn-al-Ḥubāb will give ample witness as to what happened on the day of the Araghim,
In that evening when they threw his head and testicles into the bag, [leaving him] crushed and robbed of feet,
We left the penises of the Bahlil suspended from beneath their beards like amulets.[230]

The crucifixion of the dead was also common. The earliest recorded case was that of Ḥubaysh the commander of 'Abdal-Malik, who was defeated by Baṣrīs at Rabadha. 'Amr ibn-Ḥanẓala said regarding his crucifixion:-

May the one who placed Ḥubaysh on the wooden cross before all people - I mean Qudama of the Ajdar family - be ransomed,
He caused the most evil of riding-beasts to kneel down for him, but then Ḥubaysh had behaved tyrannically and had shown insolence.[231]

Muslims were forbidden to take other Muslims as captives or slaves. But al-Farazdaq was also expressing a living idea when he boasted of his people's Jahili feats in his words:-

In asking the daughters of any tribe in marriage, we direct against them a host like a lofty mountain, teeming with neighing [horses],
[And] when we meet them, our spears marry us to virgins of noble standing in the tribe,
And many a daughter of a noble man we have married, having been asked in marriage by none but the spear-head and its shaft.[232]

4. cf. Naq., 308 for a case of a captive released by the caliph 'Alī on the understanding that 'there was no captivity in Islam' but the judgement was revoked during the rising of Ibn-az-Zubayr; cf. p. 230 above for another case; cf. also Naq., 717, for the first Muslim women to be captured in war by Busr ibn-Arţa’a in 40/660.
Al-‘Abbās ibn-al-Walīd captured the daughter of the Khārijī leader Qaṭārī ibn-al-Fujā’a and married her according to the Jāhilī pattern.¹ Al-Jaḥāf ibn Ḥukaym as-Sulāmī was expressing the same sentiment when he said after defeating the Taghlibis at the Battle of al-Bishr:-

I was married to [women] of Zuhayr and Málik through my sword - a forcible marriage where no dowry in dirhams was paid.[233]²

Dhū-'r-Rumma expressed the same idea when he said:-

There is many a noble group whose daughters we have taken in marriage through the points of swords and piercing spears.[234]³

Al-Farazdaq did once assert the authority of Umayyads and religious scruple to be deterrents against such practices when he told Jandal, the son of the poet ar-Ra‘ī:-

Had it not been for the Banū-Marwān - the offsprings of our mother who restrained the powerful from aggression - and the faith, Your two brides would have been given in marriage to the herder of our pregnant she-camels, while we would have bartered you at Najran for little goats.[235]⁴

Yet on another occasion he adduced this practice as being the proper procedure even in Islam. It is related that while he was in the company of al-Ḥasan al-Bāṣrī, a man asked the latter about the legality of contracting marriage with a married woman taken prisoner in war, whereupon the poet shouted to the man: Have you not heard what I have said in this respect? I said:-

---

1. *`Iqd.*, v, 186.
And many a wife, still in the custody of a husband, our spears have given us in marriage, thus rendered lawful — even though not divorced — for him who married her. [236]

It is said that al-Hasan agreed to it.²

Many other Jahili social ideals persisted for a long time in the Banū community. The extreme manifestations of generosity were occasionally in evidence especially in the bādiya. The famous episode of the "hamstringing" (mu‘aqara) when Ghālib ibn-Sa‘ sa‘a, al-Farazdaq’s father, caused 400 camels to be slaughtered, brought upon him the wrath of ‘Uthmān who chased him into the desert. Ghālib persisted in his defiance by calling upon pilgrims to plunder the amount of 40,000 dirhams.³ This feat was celebrated by al-Farazdaq in many poems.⁴ The practice seemed to have persisted until a much later date judging by the competition between Janāb ibn-Shārīk and the Banū-Nahshal, in which the former hamstringed eighty camels, an occasion immortalised by al-Farazdaq in a famous poem.⁵ Reference has already been made to the fury of Ziyād when al-Farazdaq, taking his father’s lead, allowed people to plunder his money and clothes in al-Mirbad.⁶ But official intervention was not always the final

1. Ibid., ii, 38; Ibn-Sall., 284; ‘Iqd., vi, 223; Agh., xix, 14, 33.
2. ‘Umda, i, 55.
5. cf. Naq., 941; Far., i, 377-381.
solution to these matters as the case of Murra ibn-Maḥkān, the Tamīmī poet, demonstrated. This Murra was very generous and often competed with his rival and kinsman, Abū-'l-Bakrā', in this field. When he once allowed people to plunder his wealth, Ziyād arrested and imprisoned him, an act prompting al-Ubayrid ar-Riyāḥī to say:

You have restrained a generous man from being liberal in his wealth, but then you shall realise what intractable men his people encompass.

And if you punish Ibn-Maḥkān for generosity, you might as well—may God offer you guidance—punish the bones of Ḥātim (of Ṭayyī').[237]

Thereupon Ziyād released him. To celebrate the occasion, the poet's rival, Abū-'l-Bakrā', slaughtered a hundred goats. The poet responded by slaughtering a hundred camels. The discrepancy between the achievements of the two rivals was sarcastically expressed in the line of an unknown poet:

A generous man has purchased a hundred camels, and given them to be plundered, whereas you gave only young goats for plunder.[238]

The Jahili ideal underlying such activities was expressed by Muqātīl ibn-Mīsma' who had showered benefits on people while in charge of Sijistān, and when he came to Baṣra people spread their cloaks for him to walk upon; overgratified he said, quoting the Qur'ān, "To such an end let those who endeavour direct their energies."[3]

Lavishing money on wine had always been a concomitant of liberality in the Jahiliyya. The prohibition of wine in

---

2. Agh., xix, 9; cf. xx, 18-19 for another extreme rivalry.
Islam succeeded partially - especially at the beginning - in driving the practice underground. People, especially some of those in authority, continued to drink it secretly, but the majority of poets with the exception of the Christian al-Akhṭal, were on the whole reticent in their wine songs. The hypocrisy inherent in such attitudes was revealed by Abū-Ḥuzāba of Tamīm who criticised Yazīd I saying:

Would he drink it, when night falls, unmixed and exquisite as musk, seeping into the heart,
And then blame those who drink it whereas his heart yearns desperately for it if he suspends drinking for a single day?[239]

Abū-Ḥuzāba, however, was more concerned with tarnishing the image of one he considered to be a lax ruler, than with moralizing about drinking wine which was very widespread in his own Baṣrī community. Already poets such as al-Farazdaq and Ḥāritha ibn-Badr, and later Abū-'l-Hindī were giving prominence in their poetry to the phenomenon. The attitude of those in authority was somewhat tolerant and a firm ruler as Ziyād maintained a very intimate relation with Ḥāritha ibn-Badr who was given to drinking wine publicly and extolling its merits in his poetry. Ziyād even defended him when some people raised doubts as to his integrity. This tacit official sanction allowed this poet freedom to indulge in drinking, and provided him with latitude to sing the praise of

2. cf. Naq., 359 for the episode of Waki' ibn-Abī-Sūd who used indulgence in drinking to allay Qutayba's fears before revolting against him.
3. Agh., xxi, 39-40; Mub., Kāmil, iii, 190-191; cf. Pellat, Milieu, 154-156; E.I.², s.v. "Ḥāritha ibn Badr".
wine and to denounce all those who endeavoured to dissuade him from drinking. He describes vividly the soothing effect of wine, and declares his commitment to it:-

Drinking of clarified [wine] has dispelled my distress and anxiety, and all that brings misfortunes,
And I swear by God that I shall never cease to be passionately fond of wine even though I am blamed by every virtuous free man,
I shall continue to drink it unadulterated, give it to my companions, and lie in wait for the heedless girded gazelle.[240]¹

Those who reproached him were always at the back of his mind:-

Many a slanderer who blamed me for drinking I have rebuffed by telling him to leave me alone with what I was drinking,
And certainly I shall never desist, as long as I live, from taking the red liquor even though the promiscuous continue to blame me,
Should I forsake my pleasure to follow your whims? O son of Qays (i.e. Ahnaf) the like of me is not susceptible to deception.[241]²

When his kinsman al-Ahnaf ibn-Qays advised him against drinking he said:-

Abū-Bahr condemns things I desire, and regards them as loathsome, unbefitting the generous leader,
If you are a slanderer say what you will, and leave my drinking alone, since I am not the only one who practises it,
I shall drink it - a red liquor with the fragrance of musk - and drink it openly in every meeting place,
You better, O son of Qays, restrict your advice to yourself, leaving me to my own views, for my judgement is not weak.[242]³

The fact that he was not the only one to drink it in public was evident:-

1. Agh., xx1, 41.
2. Ibid., 21.
I shall continue to drink it openly - be I alone or in company - as long as pilgrims perform their duties to God, giving pleasure to my fellow-drinkers, following my desire and spending spontaneously all that my hand holds,
Such is living, not that of the Son of Qays and his companions, who drink water unmixed, in measured quantities.\[243]\[1+2\]

The continual reproach drove him to employ a polemical style which pervaded almost all the available pieces of his vinous poetry. He recorded his argument with a slanderer called Mukhāriq:-

Mukhāriq has not spared his efforts in giving advice, when he blamed [me] for drinking the choicest old wine, And I told him: O Abu-Ṣakhr leave people to their foolish ways, and avail yourself of glittering red liquor, You view it when water mixes with it concertedly swaying in the hand of the girded waiter, Its fragrance resembles musk while its smell dispels the obstinacy of the drinker by its gentle manner.\[244]\[2\]

He told his friend Anas ibn-Zunaym that only his ignorance of its pleasures made him blame the poet and invited him to test it for himself:-

If the one who deprecates me for [drinking] wine would only taste it, then he would be possessed by it until he is concealed in the grave, So whether you forsake it or praise it, we - speaking plainly - love it [in the same manner] as your Lord has caused you to love foul speech, On what grounds would you blame wine whereas wine - like the very word from which it is derived (i.e. comfort) - relieves the youth of his anxieties for ever, So blame me, since blaming with respect to it only increases my love for it, and blaming sometimes leads to incitement, And I honestly swear by God that if only you drink it you will desist from reproving me, and become more inclined to excusing me,

1. Ibid.
2. Ibid., 42.
If you wish try it and taste it—old with a perfume like musk, an excellent experience,
And if, after doing this, you have not thrown off all shame, then blame me and invoke God to curse me for being an unexperienced weakling.[245]

The same polemical style was employed by his major detractor, the above Anas:

How long will you, 0 ibn-Badr, and your companions persevere in sipping the juice of grapes?
If it is evil turn away from it, leaving it to those given to waywardness and transgression,
And if it is a profitable acquisition, I should feel, 0 ibn-Badr, that you must have become tired of excessive indulgence in it,
And if you are aware of evils of wine and its drinking, why do you commit what disgraces you knowingly?[246]

In justifying spending money on wine, Ḥarītha adduces the same Ḥajjī argument, recalling similar words of Tarafa:

Many a woman who says: 0 Ḥarītha, would you not spare [your wealth] from waste? I told her to be fair,
And to advise righteousness, for I have seen that even the possessor of immense wealth is not immortal,
And I have no fault other than drinking for my morning-draught wine which foams whenever water mixes with it in the cup.[247]

The fact that such a practice was deemed meritorious was made by the poet addressing al-ʿAhnaf:

I am a man who accustomed himself to a way of life, and people undoubtedly seek to perform what they are accustomed to,
I shall give my wealth, as long as I live, liberally and spontaneously to others, whereas you are avaricious, disliked by him who keeps your company,
Why do you interfere, and what is someone else's error to you, except that all other courses of action are closed to you?[248]

2. Ibid., 38; cf. 33, 34.
3. cf. Muʿallaqāt (Tibrīzī's commentary, Cairo, 1369), 91; Arberry, 83.
5. Ibid., 27.
Offering wine to guests which was a mark of hospitality before Islam continued to be so in Basra.\(^1\) Sulaymān ibn-‘Amr of Bakr praised Ĥārītha ibn-Badr saying:—

You have entertained us excellently, giving us for our drink a red liquor like moist amber [in fragrance], And granting us a share of what you possessed as a free gift, and you have been, O son of Badr, an excellent entertainer of travellers.\(^2\)

Al-Farazdaq praised a Tamīmī dignitary saying:—

He combined, out of generosity, roast with dried meat for his guest, followed by the choicest wine.\(^3\)

In praising another, called Daykal, he said:—

I have drunk alone and have kept company with kings in drink, but I have never found a better fellow-drinker than Daykal.\(^4\)

Yet al-Farazdaq, unlike Ĥārītha ibn-Badr, was not an ardent advocate of wine in his poetry.\(^5\) He enjoyed drinking it and avoided replying to the many strictures which Jarīr passed on his conduct. His attitude — reflecting that of many of his contemporaries — seemed to have been expressed aptly by Abū-‘l-Hindā — the most distinguished of early exponents of wine in Islam\(^6\) — late in the Umayyad era when he said:—

If I perform the stipulated five prayers every day, God will forgive my transgression, And since I have not ascribed any partner to God, I have adhered to the firm faith,

---

1. cf. ‘Iqd, viii, 8 for a specific case.
2. Agh., xxi, 21; cf. reply of Ĥārītha to it.
4. Ibid., ii, 151.
5. cf. E.I.\(^2\), "Farazdağ" by Blachère.
And since I have fought against enemies, earned an income that would permit me to visit the ancient sanctuary,
This is the true faith unconcealed, spare me the small roads that branch off from the main highway.[252]

The indifference of many Arabs to the secondary requirements of canonical law, especially when put to the crucial test, was demonstrated by the outspoken attitude of the Tamīmī chief, Wakī‘ ibn-Abī-Sūd, one instance of whose behaviour was noted earlier. It is reported that when Qutayba ibn-Muslim murdered a number of Banū-'l-Ahtam of Tamīm, Wakī‘ refused to perform the noon, afternoon and evening prayers, and when he was reminded of that he retorted, "What can I do with prayers when a number of the Banū-'l-Ahtam were killed, and no body on earth or in heaven cared for them?" When Qutayba was ultimately murdered the same Wakī‘ ascended the pulpit, and instead of using the usual opening formula of praising God, he told his audience forthrightly:

Whoever overpowers a wild-ass sexually, he has subdued a master of sexual intercourse,[253]

adding:

I am the son of Khindif whose tribes attribute to me excellent deeds, and my maternal uncles are Qays-'Aylan.[254]

Thus the pre-eminence of tribalism in Basra had as a direct result the perpetuation of a number of these Jahili aspects together with memories of many others, which had, to all

---

1. Ibid., 280; cf. Aswad, 189 where he praises nabīdīn as a substitute for wine.
2. cf. Chapter I, p.37 n.l.
4. Ibid., 363.
5. Ibid.
intents and purposes, disappeared physically from Arab life after Islam. Poets continued, as we have seen earlier to recall idols, and gambling in the Jāhili fashion featured prominently in tribal poetry. Ghassān ibn-Dhuwayl attacked the people of Jarīr, saying:

They never slaughter sheep except in gambling, long being their secret deliberations and small their cooking pots.\[255\]^1

Yet Jarīr himself, in boasting of his people's hospitality, said:

A cauldron, round which people gather, with no curtain to conceal it, we have prepared for our guests when the she-camel is slaughtered in gambling.\[256\]^2

Divination and the scaring away of birds for drawing auguries played an important part in their poetry. Many other superstitions persisted. The Jāhili notion that blood of nobles and kings is an effective cure of madness and rabies\(^3\) was often repeated by poets. In praising his people al-Farazdaq said:

Those who treat [ailments] never found a more effective cure than our blood, nor have those who drink found a better substitute for bee-honey.\[257\]^4

Al-Ba‘īth gave a similar picture when he praised himself as being:

One of the Darimīs whose blood is an effective cure of ailment of madness and mental disorder.\[258\]^5

---

1. Ibid., 6.
2. Naq., 504-5.
Strange competitions reminiscent of the Jāhiliyya were often pursued even in front of emirs as did two Bedouins of Tamîm and Azd, when they competed in breaking wind in front of Khalid al-Qasrî, the governor of Iraq. The Azdî was said to have performed poorly, prompting his Tamîmî rival to say:

You have broken wind very feebly, and were I to do it I would make the runaway ostriches hear it, Causing it to shoot like a catapult, its sound surpassing in intensity the rumbling of thunder.[259]

The demands of Arab life, moreover, ensured the survival of some practices earlier frowned upon by Islam. A case in point is the upsurge in the fortunes of poets devoting their energies to panegyric and satire. We have seen earlier that there existed at the beginning a kind of reluctance - changing into resistance at times - to accept the traditional claims of poets who used threats to bully dignitaries into granting them favours. The Mukhadram poet Ibn-Faswa— who was notorious for intimidating Iraqi dignitaries and forcing them to liberality through his poetry— indicated this attitude when Ibn-‘Abbâs, the emir of Baṣra on ‘Alî’s behalf rebuffed him:

I approached Ibn-‘Abbâs hoping for his benefits, but he neither wanted my favour nor feared my disagreeable reaction, And he told his door-keepers to bar my entrance, stuffing the seams of the door against any peeping eye.[260]

The poet earlier asked this emir to “assist him in carrying out

1. Ḥayawan, iv, 132; cf. Nag., 11 for another example of competing in relieving bowels in Jarîr’s poetry.
2. cf. Chapter II, pp.75-77.
the obligations of murū'a," to which Ibn-‘Abbas is reported to have replied, "What on earth is the murū'a of one who disobeys the Compassionate, utters calumnies and severs what God has commanded to be united? By God if I bestow any favour upon you I will encourage you to continue in your unbelief and disobedience. Be gone! I swear by God if it reaches me that you have satirized anyone of the Arabs, I shall sever your tongue."¹ Later on ʿAbdallāh ibn-ʿĀmir, the emir of Baṣra (29-35/650-656) told the same poet, "By God you do not seek assistance on account of any honour, faith or rank, and I do not see why any man from Quraysh should give you anything," and the poet was ordered out ignominiously.² Later on, however, Ibn-ʿĀmir feared his vicious tongue and felt it necessary to placate him.³ Developments in political and social conditions contributed immensely to the recovery and growth of this kind of poetry.⁴

2. Impact of Islam:

The Jahili infra-structure was, however, continuously modified and reshaped under the influence of Islam and urbanization despite the resurgent tribalism, which was, in its turn, undergoing important changes to suit the new conditions.⁵ This process would presumably be partially interrupted in time of insurgency, but it is important to note

1. Ibid., 144.
2. Ibid., 145.
3. Ibid.
4. cf. Chapter II above.
5. cf. Chapter I, 28-55; and Chapter III.
that what features of the Ḥajjīyya asserted themselves at such times - though admittedly against the general spirit of Islam - were not so much directed against Islam as against authority in which Bedouins naturally saw an infringement of their freedom. The general framework of Islam had been accepted as the bedrock on which society rested, but naturally the assimilation of its ideals was a slow process, and consequently Bedouins continued, as we have seen, to practice their earlier activities within the framework of nominal Islam.

This duality of character in society can easily be detected in the personal conduct of poets as well as in their production. The portrait of the obdurate character of a poet like al-Farazdaq as revealed to us so far by words and deeds of his already reported, as well as by the attacks of Jarīr on him which were not altogether groundless, is tempered by other streaks of piety and religious sentiments bracketing his life. These, at a certain critical point in his life, assumed the magnitude of a spiritual crisis following which he tried to break away from his past and devote his energies to a new life of piety.¹ His failure to sustain his endeavour reflects the swing of the pendulum between stability and anarchy to which Basrī life was so often subjected. He was too sensitive an index of his times and community to have responded differently. Like his community which erupted every now and then in futile attempts to shake off manifestations of control and to restore vestiges of lost

¹. cf. Chapter II, 127.
freedom, this poet's character reflected the stresses and strains of social change in a manner that merits studying him as a fairly accurate index of his society. As-Sayyid al-ikurtaḍa said about him, "At the end of his life he desisted from slandering and transgression, and returned to religious conduct. However, even during his period of waywardness, he was not entirely cut off from religion or utterly heedless of its dictates." It is reported that whenever he went out and saw the youths of Banū-Tamīm with copies of the Qur'ān in their laps, the spectacle pleased him immensely and his comment was, "May my parents be your ransom! This is how your ancestors behaved." He was found on another occasion weeping late in a cold night in the mosque, and when he was asked by a friend he said, "I recalled my sins and they distressed me, so I sought refuge in God." His oft-repeated encounters with al-Ḥasan al-Ḥaṣrī — very frequent at the end of his life — in which al-Ḥasan is said to have ensured him of heavenly blessings and forgiveness of sins so long as his faith was pure, and the stories about how people saw him in a vision after his death and heard him say that God had forgiven his sins through the words he had uttered in his conversations with al-Ḥasan, most of which are obviously mythical, are extremely helpful in assessing the mood of society towards the end of the Umayyad era. By then most of the problems especially those concerned with tribal rivalry which

1. Khiz., i, 207.
3. Agh., xix, 47.
4. Ibid., 47; Kāmil, ii, 77, 78-79.
were burning issues at an earlier stage eventually lost their vitality if not altogether their appeal. New relationships in the social structure were ameliorating sensibilities in a manner conducive to the cultivation of deeper feelings, social and religious. The consuming activities of an earlier period in which people were more given to waywardness and insurrection came to be viewed from the perspective of almost a century of social development in a new light. The rivalries and competitive encounters of those days came to be regarded as absurdities and sins from which absolution was earnestly sought from God, as the mythical accounts about the latter days of al-Farazdaq indicate. Similar features can be discerned in the character of Jarīr, who stood in sharp contrast with al-Farazdaq as far as personal conduct was concerned, a fact conceded by the latter. Jarīr's devotion and piety were frequently praised by critics. He was less responsive to the dominant mood than his volatile rival, judging from an anecdote which brings out this difference very clearly. Abū-'Ubayda relates that while performing their pilgrimage, the two poets met at Mina. Al-Farazdaq is said to have told Jarīr:-

\[
\text{You shall certainly meet at the dwellings in Mina a source of glory [for me], so indicate to me what it is you take pride in.}[261]^{3}
\]

Jarīr's immediate reaction to the challenge was the formula: Labbayk! allāhumma Labbayk! (Here I am! O God I am at your service!) Yet, critics reckoned him as the severest of

2. cf. Nag., 32; Agh., vii, 38.
4. Ibid.
slanderers,¹ and his contemporaries seemed to have recognized him as such. It is reported that he used to conclude his daily session of recital by indulging in praising God, a practice found distasteful by one of his audience who said, "This glorification of God is of no avail to you on account of your slandering innocent women." Jarīr simply said, "O my nephew, 'they have mingled a good deed and an evil one, maybe God will turn to them [with mercy].'² By God they provoke me, and I find it difficult to forbear."³ The same practice was adopted by Dhū-'r-Rumma who used to say after reciting his poetry, "By God I shall pour on you (i.e. his poetry) something you never suspected: 'glory and praise be to God, there is no God but God Who is great'". The report adds that he was exemplary in performing his prayers."⁴

It is obvious that these remarks underlining the duality in the character of these poets and many of their contemporaries go beyond the simple fact of reflecting only their points of view or personal conduct. The fact that the 'good' poet Jarīr, and the 'villain' of Baṣrī community, al-Farazdaq, should both be equally dragged into actions, which both of them came to regret later in life, is indicative of the power of social forces which dictated their course. The piety of Jarīr, as well as that of his community, could not resist the upsurge of tribalism. But it is equally true that once stability was maintained, and conditions became

---

1. Ibn-Qut., op.cit., 437.
2. Q., ix, 103.
3. Agh., vii, 56.
4. Ibid., xvi, 128.
favourable for religious and urban sentiments to unfold, even a wayward character as al-Farazdaq was likely to feel the change and even attempted to cut himself loose from his earlier moorings. The final equilibrium in which the Islamic element by far outweighed its Jahili counterpart was reached through a painful process of readjustment whereby the Arabs gradually adapted themselves to the dictates of their new destiny.

We can trace the salient points of this evolution as they are manifested in poetic production. It is easy to discern the impact of Islam in three important areas. The physical presence of Islam as an integral part of the environment provided poets with ample material upon which they drew in description and in the formulation of images. The second area is where Islamic notions are employed in matters of social intercourse. Human relations, as witness the nasib and ghazal, came to be viewed in a new colour. The Muslim whose mind is occupied with the idea of sin speaks in the lines of Jarir:

The girl for which longed the heart of a repenting man, given to prostrating himself to God, on that day at al-Hamama ...

So do not, in order to deny me, combine reproach for sins with the estrangement and aloofness of one who is proud.[262]

He appeals to the religious sentiment of his sweetheart when he tells her on another occasion:

Was it not more becoming for you to have feared God when you alarmed one bent on pilgrimage who had travelled all night and then alighted and fallen asleep?[263]

1. This point will be elaborated in Chapter VII.
3. Ibid., 686.
Dhū-'r-Rumma, after describing his beloved in the most open Jahili style where the girl is stripped of her clothing to reveal her concealed beauties, and the lover — who is described as 'the ardent seeker after corporeal pleasure' — is allowed to sleep with her in the dark,\(^1\) ends the description of the passionate scene with the line:

That is the girl to whom I have become unintentionally attached in love and certainly the man of noble character and the Muslim are susceptible to lurement.[264]\(^2\)

In moralizing about love he utters the general statement:

Certainly never have I seen anything like love as an ailment of the noble Muslim, nor anything like love to bring reproach to him who contracts it.[265]\(^3\)

The same poet frequently describes the obsession of love in the same context as his religious experience as in his two lines:

I direct my face towards Mecca in the morning when after the interval of night it appears to me,
And perform prayers, but when I remember her I fail to recall whether I performed two [rak‘as] or eight.

Complaining to God about love is a recurring feature in the poetry of Jarīr. On one occasion he invokes God saying:

I beseeched the Owner of the Throne, the Patron of Muḥammad, to bring a dispersed group together or make a remote [resident] draw near,

O Owner of the Throne, I shall never, as long as I live, desist from seeking Sulaymān, so decree what you will.[267]\(^5\)

---

\(^1\) Rumma, 4-5.
\(^2\) Ibid., 6.
\(^3\) Ibid., 43.
\(^4\) Ibid., 652.
\(^5\) Jar., 174; cf. 173.
Al-Farazdaq calls the memory of his beloved a delusion (ghurūr) distracting him from prayers. After describing the vision of his beloved salmā he went on to say:

But when the caller summoned [people] to prayers, I arose, having been in delusion with respect to it. 

Islamic virtues were employed extensively in panegyric and satire. In addition to what we have noted earlier in connection with Umayyad caliphs and their governors, Islam was freely used even in the nafsīd, whose mainspring was the Jahiliyya. Al-Farazdaq, in satirizing Bal-Ḥarīth ibn-Ka‘b, whom he accused of following Judaism, boasts:

No! I swear by Him who honoured us by Islam, and Who causes the dead to be buried in tombs, The Banū-‘d-Dayyyan never achieved any merit or virtue.

‘Umar ibn-Lajā’ told Jarīr:

Our women were not forced to ride behind [our enemies] at the Battle of al-Hudhayl, nor did they stand in line to prostrate themselves to the idol Sajja, On the contrary, we have protected them in polytheism by shafts [of spears] and in Islam we have believed the Prophet Muḥammad.

Islam also features in satire in different forms. In satirizing Tayyi‘, Al-Farazdaq says:

1. Far., i, 283.
2. Far., ii, 347.
Never had a Ta'i woman experienced the healing of a wound caused by circumcision, nor was she ever found performing prayers in a mosque devoted to the faith. [272]

Ru’ba satirizes the opponents of his tribe Tamīm saying:

Tamīm is afflicted by groups,
Who are neither maternal nor paternal uncles of ours
when the edge of the sword quivers in war,
They never guard themselves against the penalties imposed by Islam, because of the flimsiness of their faith and their disregard of kinship. [273]

In satirizing al-Baʿith, Jarīr said:

And when I direct myself towards you, your treatment of me is not that of Muslims, nor do you display generosity towards me. [274]

Jarīr, furthermore, refers frequently to the Qur’ān and exposes the failure of those he censures to recite it. He sarcastically speaks of Sukayna, the paternal aunt of al-Farazdaq:

Sukayna stood up to stallions, but she – the daughter of al-Ḥutat – refused to stand up when the Sūra of the booty was recited. [275]

He speaks of al-Baʿith and al-Farazdaq:

Certainly al-Baʿith and the slave of the Muqāṣa’s family never recite the Sūra of al-ʿAṣba. [276]

And castigates al-Farazdaq in his line:

May God curse al-Farazdaq when he spends his evening wasting away the detailed and oft-repeated [portions of the Qur’ān]. [277]

1. Far., i, 115.
2. Ruʿb., 137.
4. Q., viii.
5. Naq., 322. It seems that there is no particular reason why this Sūra of the Qur’ān is mentioned.
6. i.e. Q., v. 1.
7. Naq., 340, where the poet is said to have meant that they do not fulfil their obligations.
He further indulges in criticizing his transgression:—

No Muslim neighbour of al-Farazdaq's is safe from a monkey spending his whole night sleepless, You have transgressed all the inviolable limits of God since your boyhood, and when your hair became grey this failed to restrain you.[278]

The third area in which the influence of Islam is conspicuous comprises the diverse instances in works of poets where the religious element features as either an immediate experience or an underlying factor in personal attitudes. The religious experience comes out vividly in the poetry of al-‘Ajjaj, who is otherwise given to Bedouin themes. He devotes a complete poem of rajaz comprising 71 hemistichs to the description of a critical moment in his life when he was overcome by illness and his family despaired of his recovery, but at the last moment the mercy of God came to his rescue and he was spared death. In addition to departing from the conventional prelude and substituting for it religious themes in a number of his poems, he is always conscious of his faith, even when he treats the conventional themes of tribal glory and the like. In boasting of his people Tamīm he started one poem by saying:—

I swear by God had it not been for my fear that the angels tormenting the damned should use me as fuel for Hell-fire where there is no one to call upon for succour, [Placing me] among the inmates of Fire whose skins have been exorciated, the ignorant ones would have known that I overpower them,

1. Naq., 396.
3. cf. Chapter VII.
[by] fracturing their heads, striking away the death-echo from skulls, and wounding them in ear-holes.[279]

In another poem he invokes God to forgive his sins before proceeding to boasting:-

0 my Lord, the Lord of the sanctuary and the white-washed [edifice], and the swift she-camels traversing every barren, wide desert,
It is you I invoke, so accept my supplication, forgive my errors, and bring my endeavours to fruition,
Whenever a war is waged, it is our custom to heed neither any debt we might incur, nor stragglers who fail to catch up.[280]

The same device was used by his son Ru’ba. Before praising Maslama Ibn-‘Abd-al-Malik [d.120/738], he confesses his shortcomings to God saying:-

0 my Lord if I ever err or forget, you neither forget nor die,
Certainly the one who gives protection like that rendered to me - when He rescued me from what I feared -
Is my Lord but for whose defence I would have passed away - and only serious endeavour caused me to reach what I have reached.[281]

In a true Islamic spirit Ru’ba tells his detractor, before praising his people Tamīm:-

0 you who exposes himself to missiles after missiles, If you are fearful of God and obedient to Him, then it is contrary to truth to initiate [new courses], Whereas God has shown you a convincing truth; certainly nothing equals piety as a sustenance to him who seeks pleasure, And forbearance is the best that compels a man to abstain from sin and viciousness, And When a wicked man persists in obscene speech then ignoring him is a sufficient defence against all contemptible base men.[282]

2. Ibid., 40.
4. Ru’b., 87-88.
Al-ʻAjjaj resorts to such notions even in his descriptions of
desert animals. In one poem he ends such a description on
this sobering note:—

O my Lord - I know not whereas you are Omniscient - every
man is at a stipulated distance from you,
Are we, the two of us (i.e. the poet and his riding-beast),
passing over among those who pass over, or passing away
with those passing away?[283]

In another he prefaced the description of camels by the lines:—

O my Lord, you restore the broken [man] to his former
state, and give sustenance to the begging poor,
You have given [me] a herd of growling camels, brown,
reddish white, brisk and yielding much milk,
You never spoilt the unstinting gift by creating troubles
as punishment, nor was it overburdened,
Nor [did you exact] a back-breaking hire - they continued
that day trying to avert the hot and scorching wind.

[284]

Even in describing the waywardness of his youthful days his son
Ru'ba was careful not to exceed the lawful limits:—

The emaciation of my body - like yours - has disturbed you,
since grey hair is the headgear of [approaching] death,
And my roughness after active youth, when I never
distinguished, even if you asked me,
The difference between the worship of a Friday and that of
a Saturday, being young and tender not bothering about
the date of [any] fixed appointment,
Like the eel moving rapidly in a rock cavity, being both
a human being and a jinni, as you have described,
Committing everything short of absolute debauchery, but
now I came back to [my senses], and my conduct has
become upright.[285]

These glimpses, patchy as they are, indicate the indelible
mark of Islam, and the effect it had on the consciousness of the

2. Ibid., 24.
3. Ru'b., 23-24; cf. 88 where he is more explicit about
   chastity.
Quasi-tribal community of Basra. Although it is exceedingly difficult to fathom the depth of sentiments underlying the framework of such religious themes, especially in the poetry of those poets devoting their entire energies to portraying traditional Arab life in its different facets, we can accept them at least - even if we doubt the sincerity of some of their authors - as genuine reflections of the community, or that part of it such poets represented, i.e. the quasi-tribal element of Basra. Although the marginal position, from a statistical point of view, of Islamic elements in their poetry on the one hand, and the dominance of traditional themes such as satire, panegyric, description of animals, deserts and the like on the other hand do not warrant any sweeping statements about the prevalence of Jahili life over that of Islamic structure of society, it can nevertheless legitimately be said that this kind of poetry - with both elements taken together - represents one extreme end of the social scale where the traditional elements reigned supreme, especially in times of rebellion. A more realistic picture of the tumultuous life of Basra, however, cannot be reached without considering what was taking place at the other extreme end of the same social scale. The most articulate exponents of social transformation here are the Khariji poets. Despite their rebellion against the Islamic jamāʿa, their poetry reflected the puritanic spirit in its extreme forms. Their rebellion against the political jamāʿa arose from what they thought to be the failure of this jamāʿa to live up to the demands of the
Islamic system as they viewed it. We therefore notice the Islamic element in some of them, instead of co-existing with the traditional element side by side in the same character, revolting against the other component. Thus tribalism which constitutes the bulwark of the social system came under attack from some of their poets. ‘Īsā ibn-‘Ātik al-Khāṭṭī substituted Islam for it as an object of boasting:

    My parent is Islam beside which I have no other parent when they boast of Bakr and Tamin,
    Either tribe supports the one claiming lineage among its members in order to link him up with those of noble descent,
    But there is no nobility in descent - even though the origins are noble - only the pious man is noble.  

This line stands in sharp contrast with what Abū-'l-Aswad maintained in his line:

    The best intrinsic quality a man can count upon in any condition, once he has accepted Islam, is nobility of origins. 

Although ‘Imrān ibn-Ḥiṭṭān utilized to full advantage the benefits of the tribal system in his flight from al-Ḥājjāj, and said:

    One day I am a Yemenī when I meet a Yemenī, and a Adnānī when I meet a Ma‘addī,

he expressed his disgust with tribal affinity which many tribes prized above all values, in a poem in which he praised an Azdī group who offered him hospitality:

1. cf. Q., xlix, 13.
3. Aswad, 165.
I felt secure among them unlike that group who started
by enquiring whether I belonged to Rabi'ā' or Muḍar,
Or the tribe of Qaḥṭān; and that is certainly foolishness
as it proved with Rawḥ and his friend Zufar.
None among them but is pleased with a relationship that
would make me one of their members, even though they
are numerous,
We are but the sons of Islam, and God is one, and the
best deserving of God among his servants are those who
are thankful.[289]

Their revolt against the status quo provided them with
heightened insight into the maladies of their society and they
often contrasted the prevailing practices with their puritanic
ideals. In addition to their bitter criticism of Umayyad
administration they attacked a variety of social features which
must have been of considerable importance to their
contemporaries. The marked note of asceticism which
impregnated their poetry, especially that of ‘Imrān ibn-Ḥiṭṭān
whom al-Āmidī described as "the most gifted of poets in the
matter of asceticism," is worthy of attention. ‘Imrān
detested the acquisitiveness of the people around him and
never tired of pointing out the futility of their endeavours
which are invariably thwarted by death:

This life of ours has no splendour, nor is this abode
of ours a [real] abode,
I can see that we are never tired of living in it, and
that we are rendered desirous of covetousness and
expectation,
Whereas neither it nor we will continue [to survive]
indefinitely, nor are we given the choice,

1. Rawḥ ibn-Zimbā' of Judhām, and Zufar ibn-al-Ḥārith of
   Kilāb, two Arab dignitaries with whom the poet sought
   refuge from al-Ḥajjāj.
2. Agh., xvi, 154; cf. Khaw., 64, 74 for references
   favourable to tribal affinities.
3. al-Mu'talif wa-'l-Mukhtalif, 91 No.245.
And our wealth is but borrowed stuff which the one who lent it shall eventually retrieve from the borrower. [290]

Such a hollow endeavour should not engage the attention of or deceive the wise man who is not given to dreams and vain hopes.

‘Imrān proceeds to exhort and warn:-

How long should souls be given death to drink from cups, while you are playing and enjoying easy living? Or is it that you have become content with being diverted with wishes, whereas you are being pushed every day [nearer] to death? It is only visions or passing shadows, and the man of judgment is never beguiled by the like of it, So amass provisions ceaselessly for the day when you will become really destitute, and gather [merits] for yourself; it is not for others that you do.[291]

But nonetheless the majority of mankind whom he describes as 'damned' never lose interest in the pleasures of this world, however hollow or transitory these might be:-

I perceive that the wretched among men never get tired of it despite the fact that they are naked and starving therein,
I view it - even though it is loved - as though it is a summer's cloud that will soon clear away,
Just like a party of travellers who, having satisfied their wants, departed, their road being well marked and broad.[292]

Consequently death as the inevitable end features prominently in his poetry. He once told his wife:-

If death is a distasteful matter to you, depart and seek the inhabitants of another earth who do not die,
And you will not find an earth inhabited by human beings who will not come [through birth] and go away [through death].[293]

2. Ibid., 17, No.29; cf. Dhahabī, iii, 284.
3. Dhahabī, iii, 284; Khaw., 17-18, No.30; cf. also P.19 Nos. 32, 33, 34.
4. Khaw., 16, No.27.
Although the death of his friend and leader, Abū-Ḥalīl Mirdās ibn-Udayya which he lamented passionately, was the most devastating blow to his emotional life, as well as that of many of their associates, and must inevitably have heightened his predilection for describing death in passionate terms, death as a favourite theme flowed naturally from his view of the world as a transitory and void existence in which even death itself - the destroyer of existence - is destroyed:

Nothing but its Creator defeats death, and death itself is destroyed when fate overcomes it. And every grief - compared to death - is insignificant, death being overriding above everything else.^[294]^ Attachment to such a void life reflects a lack of confidence in God whose bountifulness is unlimited.^[3]^ Many social ills arose from this weakness. The intensity of this poet's sentiments were a natural reaction to the indulgence of his Basrī community in worldly pursuits. When the poet passed by al-Farazdaq and heard him reciting an encomium, he told him:

O you who praise the servants [of God] to be given favours, to God belongs all that their hands possess, So ask of God what you have demanded of them, and await the favour of Him who distributes [favours] and repeats his gifts, Do not credit the generous man with things that are not his due, nor give the miserly the title of a generous man^[295]^.

2. *Agh.*, xvi, 151; *Khaw.*, 28, No.51; cf. P.28 No.52; PP.30-31, No.57.
3. cf. the lines of ‘Urwa ibn-‘Udhayna, P. 278 No.319 below.
4. *Agh.*, xvi, 156-7; *Mub.*, Kāmil, v, 185.
But al-Farazdaq was not alone in hankering after other people's wealth. The same attitude was taken by soldiers who gained their livelihood from the state in return for killing others. 'Imran overheard some soldiers saying, "Why should we not fight the Khārijīs? Are we not receiving our stipends regularly?" He reflected cynically:

If some Jews or Christians were sent forth to lead them, They would have said, "We are content as long as you maintain our pensions, and continue to provide us with our share of the wheat of Kaskar.[296]

The intense piety and devotion of the Khārijīs was also shared by a number of the qurra' and qussas, whose activities played an important role in counteracting the militancy and highhandedness of Bedouin elements. Although poetry did not preserve a record of many of their activities, their influence on some poets was remarkable. The influence of al-Ḥasan al-Baṣrī on al-Farazdaq is attested by the anecdote related by Ibn-Sallām, the gist of which was that the poet came to al-Ḥasan and requested him to listen to a satire he had composed on Satan. When al-Ḥasan rebuffed him by telling him that he had no intention of listening to what he had to say, al-Farazdaq retorted menacingly, "You will listen, otherwise I shall go out and tell people that al-Ḥasan forbids people to castigate Satan." Al-Ḥasan had to listen to the satire which ran as follows:--

1. Khaw., 20, No.35; cf. Yaq., Buldān, s.v."Kaskar".
2. This point will be elaborated in Chapter VI.
I have obeyed you, O Devil, for seventy years, but now that my entire hair has become grey, and my life has neared its end, I took flight to my Lord, confident that I shall eventually encounter my death, And when the head of that which I feared, drew nearer — and this I considered an unavoidable encounter, I swore to exert myself in all conditions whether of perfect health or sickness, How often has the parent of jinnis, the Devil, given free reign to the she-camels [of my desires], Constantly does he lure me with desires, as he rests his thigh on the saddle, sometimes in front of me, sometimes behind, Conveying to me the good news that I will not die, and that he will make me immortal in paradise, enjoying peace, And I told him, "Was it not more becoming that your right hand should have rescued your minor brother (i.e. Pharaoh) from swollen green seas?[297]

Then he proceeds to describe how Satan had lured Pharaoh and how, after plunging him into the Red Sea, he betrayed him; how he persuaded the people of Thamūd to hamstring the she-camel, Adam and Eve to leave Paradise, concluding:-

How many generations, who had obeyed you — living, as it were, under the shadow of thin clouds — were reduced to mere tales,

O Devil, you are not the person whose pleasure I seek to secure, nor the one who will lead me by the reins. [298]

The immense influence exerted by al-Ḥasan, and the wu‘ūz in general, on al-Farazdaq is further demonstrated by the story related about their meeting at the burial ceremony of either the poet’s wife or a Baṣrī learned man. After the burial al-Ḥasan exhorted people and warned them, and when he sat down, al-Farazdaq is reported to have stood up and recited

1. Far., 11, 213.
2. Ibid., 214.
the lines:--

A failure indeed is such of Adam's offsprings as walks
to Fire fettered by the neck, blue of complexion,
I fear beyond the tomb - if He does not forgive me - what
is hotter and more oppressive than the grave,
When a merciless leader shall approach me on the Day of
Resurrection, a driver to drive off al-Farazdaq.[299]¹

The influence of the qussās is also very potent on the
rajaz poets, as we shall see in the following chapter. It is
sufficient to indicate here that in addition to the various
religious themes which impregnated their works, we perceive
in some of their compositions the beginnings of didactic
poetry, which is obviously the result of their contact with
the qussās. This is very marked in al-'Ajjāj, especially in
the poem where he describes vividly his conception of the Day
of Resurrection:--²

Is not the day entitled 'the Day of Resurrection' the
greatest day of rumbling and bustling?
[It is] the day when you behold every nursing mother
deny her baby the breast, and every pregnant woman
miscarry,
And every sober person drunk and boisterous, disregarding
the sanctuary frequented by pilgrims,
[When] the firmaments and constellations are rent, so
that their surface can be seen split,
And He commands the seas to swell, and it is that day
which causes Gog to come forth,
And drives Magog to come out of its rubble; and
[people] are reduced into two parties:
Those who enter a blissful paradise and drink honey
mixed,
With ice-cold rain-water, and those who scream with
intense clamour,
The fire being heard to blaze as it approaches them.

[300]³

2. The same theme is treated in a similar manner by 'Imrān
ibn-Ḥittān, the Kharijī poet in an effective poem of
16 lines; cf. Khaw., 30 No.57.
3. 'Ajj., 11, No.6.
Al-‘Ajjaβ is said to have recited another poem, in which he also described the Day of Resurrection, to Abū-Hurayra, the Prophet's Companion and Traditionist who told him: 'I bear witness that you believe in the Day of Reckoning.' But the impression made by these groups was not always a good one. The experience of Dhū-'r-Rumma with some of the qurra' seemed not to have been a happy one, judging from the lines of bitter satire he composed on them:

As for the beverage of dates (i.e. wine) be not horrified by those who drink it, but beware of those who drink mere water,
They are a people who conceal what is in their hearts, so that when they get the upper hand, they become the real ailment,
Tucking up their clothes to reveal half their legs, they are the real thieves, yet they are called reciters (qurra').[301]

ii. OTHER SOCIAL ASPECTS

While the strife between the two ideals of the Jahiliyya and Islam continued unabated in both its revolutionary and evolutionary forms the mundane business of society had to be conducted in a manner that would allow the maximum social stability possible under such conditions of political and social unrest as prevailed in Baṣri community. The rapid urbanization of the migr and the tremendous flow of wealth from the newly conquered territories all helped to put the foundation of civilized life on a sound footing, which was

1. Arch., xxi, 85.
2. Rumma, 661.
not easily shaken by the incessant Kharijī raids or the endemic tribal wars.\(^1\) This urban development with its attendant problems regarding the distribution of power and wealth imposed its own codes and dictated certain patterns of behaviour, if not fully documented in poetry, at least their general features are reflected.

The most important single factor here was the growth of state power into an elaborate machine of enforcement, coercion and also a source of immense wealth. The Arabs readily recognized that "while glory and nobility (su’dad) rested on chieftainship in the Jahiliyya, in Islam they rested on investiture of office."\(^2\) The power and respect which office bestowed on individuals - scarcely known before - was pointed out by Ibn-Mufarrigh when he satirized ‘Ubaydallāh ibn-Ziyād:

\begin{quote}
Reason with yourself - and you will discover a warning
there - whether you have ever acquired any honour
except through assuming the office of emir,
Sumayya has lived all her long life in ignorance of the
fact that her own son is one of the multitudes of
Quraysh.[302]\(^3\)
\end{quote}

An index of the power of the state was the terror that the sight of a policeman excited in a man’s heart, as demonstrated by the case of al-Farazdaq when two policemen of his own tribe played a practical joke on him.\(^4\) Jarīr experienced a similar fright on another occasion.\(^5\) An ordinary individual

\begin{itemize}
\item[1.] cf. Chapter I, social development, p. 26 ff.
\item[2.] Mub., Kāmil, iii, 6.
\item[3.] Ash., xvii, 67.
\item[4.] Ibid., xix, 25.
\item[5.] cf. Naq., 32.
\end{itemize}
as ad-Dahnī, the wife of al-'Ajjāj put her case in a nutshell when she tried to justify her reluctant tolerance of her aged husband:-

By God had it not been for fear of the emir, the policeman and [my concern for my] son, I would have rambled with the shaykh, [carrying him] from al-Baqīr like an intractable she-camel.[303]

The Company of the emir ensured many benefits and people sought access to him. Nearness to those in authority became an object of boasting. Jarīr said:-

I have become the poet surest of favour with those in command over people, the one who shoots furthest when arrows are shot. [304]2

The more powerful the patron the better for the poet. Dhū-'r-Rumma made this clear when he satirized Marwān ibn-Abī-Ḥafṣa:-

[wine] are the gifts of the commander of believers, and not a medley of scattered shares offered by different benefactors,
Whereas you never acquired any gift - until your hair became grey - but that which you tie to your cloak when you get up.[305]3

The prestige of an individual is measured by the accessibility of the emir to him, as in the lines of Dhū-'r-Rumma:-

To many an emir in whose presence people remain silent with eyes cast down like male bustards before a falcon,
I gained admittance once my name was [announced] to him, my virtues being of immense dimensions.[306]4

In praising his father al-'Ajjāj, Ru`ba said:-

1. 'Ajj., 77.
3. 'Umda, i, 84-85.
4. Rumma, 57.
Al-‘Ajjāj has established a [great] reputation, so call me by a name which — when genealogies become long — suffices for me,

How excellent as a successful seeker of admittance is my father when the monarch's gate become difficult to penetrate.[307]

But the frequent succession of caliphs and emirs resulted in drastic changes in the positions of those favoured by their predecessors, as Jarīr implied when he asked one of those enjoying the caliph's favour to intercede on his behalf:—

O you man who is loosening his turban! This is your time, mine has passed away,
Tell our caliph if you ever meet him that I am [waiting] at the door like a camel tied to another.[308]

The benefits of emirs were in most cases confined to kinsmen and close associates. Nepotism was common, and poets alluded to the practice quite often. Thus when Ibn-'Abbas expelled Ibn-Faswa from Baṣra, the poet, referring to the Baṣrī family of Zahran whose daughter Ibn-'Abbas married, said:—

Had I been a member of the Zahran family I would have satisfied my need, but, alas, I am only the client of Jamīl ibn-Ma‘mar.[309]

The same idea was expressed by al-Farazdaq in a satire on Khalid al-Qasrī. Yet the emir who controlled financial matters and especially stipends and pensions (ṣṭa') could exert considerable pressure and inflict hardships on his opponents. Jarīr experienced this hardship when his pension was withdrawn by Ibn-Sa'd at the time of 'Umar II;—

1. Ru‘b., 160.
2. Jar., 486.
4. cf. Chapter IV, p. 193 verse No.149.
5. cf. Chapter I, 32 above.
You have deprived [of my allowance] children who possess no fruit whereas Ibn-Sa'd enjoys sugar and raisins,
And I used to think that Ibn-Sa'd would offer me happiness, but then conjectures are liable to err,
If you restore my allowance to me, it will be only a few nights' enjoyment which will be soon paid back [to the treasury].[310]

But more often than not emirs used the 'ata as an instrument of persuasion. Ziyād used it to lure back al-Farazdaq when the poet fled from him:—

Ziyād has invited me to [receive] a pension, but never will I draw nearer to him as long as noble men continue to pay abundant [dowries],
If indeed he is willing to make grants, then there are many in Ziyad's company much reduced by poverty.[311]

Some emirs used it in an irregular manner to favour some of their intimate associates. But the practice did not always go unchallenged. When Ziyād transferred the Dīwan of his friend Ḥarītha ibn-Badr, the Tamīmī poet to that of Quraysh, securing thereby for him the maximum stipend, the incident did not pass unnoticed, and a poet of Banū-Kulayb alluded to the malpractice in an indirect and sarcastic manner by commenting on the side-issue of Ḥarītha's origin, in these lines:—

I bear witness that Ḥarītha ibn-Badr is a Ghudānī in shape and speech,
Sajāh is nearer to him - in the Book of God - than Nawfal and the sons of Hisham.[312]

Ways and means were employed to influence those in authority to increase the 'ata. The same Ḥarītha ibn-Badr whose 'ata

2. *Par.*, i, 187; cf. i, 199 for another case with Yazīd ibn-al-Muhallab; also cf. *Ibn-Sall.*, 286.
3. Earlier Mu'āwiyah used the device to promote one of his generals to the highest rank, but the candidate's calibre seemed to have merited the promotion; cf. *Jāhiẓ*, *Tāj*, 57.
4. *Agh.*, xxi, 22.
was 1600 dirhams seized the opportunity of Walīd I's horse winning a race, and after congratulating him he proceeded to say:-

There is only a short step to [achieve] the pension of two thousand [dirhams], an increase of four hundred still remaining,
If ever I should die they would be yours, meanwhile they will be a source of enjoyment to us for some years. [313]

The caliph agreed to the increment on condition that it should be shared between them, so his 'aṭā' was raised to 1800. When another horse of the caliph won the race, the poet repeated the performance, saying:-

The two thousands have been precluded only by a minor hitch, but they are now nearer than before,
So grant them to me as a favour, may my soul be your ransom, for my hopes are pinned to some of your bonds.[314]

The caliph ratified the increase making his stipend, 2,000 dirhams. 3 The dependence of a large number of people, especially those in the military service on the 'aṭā' was recognized and jeered at by 'Imrān as we have seen earlier. 4

Increase in stipends was also used as an incentive to soldiers to exert greater effort in fighting. Thus in the Battle of Dūlāb (65/684), when Baṣrīs were fighting against the Khawārij, Ḥarīthā ibn-Badr, who was put in command over Baṣrī troops shouted, "Any of the mawāli who joins us shall receive the stipend of an Arab, and any Bedouin who joins us shall receive

1. Ibid., 27.
2. Agh., xx1, 27.
3. Ibid.
4. cf. p. 266 No. 296 above.
the stipend of an emigrant." But when he saw the suffering of his men at the hands of the Khawārij, and the futility of their endeavour, he said:-

The penis of an ass is the allowance fit for your youth, while the testicles are the portion of Bedouins, As for the mawālī - may they bite their father's penis - they are the ones doomed to disappointment.[315]¹

The central role that the Diwan system played in maintaining the livelihood of many Baṣrīs is demonstrated, if only negatively, by the practice of Abū-ʿl-Aswad ad-Duʿālī who refused to join it. A friend of his - al-Ḥarīth ibn-Khulayd, who drew the maximum pension rebuked him in the words, "What is it that prevents you from seeking the Diwan wherein lies much wealth and many benefits?"² His antipathy to the Umayyads together with his Shīʿite leanings influenced his decision to reject the official subsidy. The result was penury and destitution from which he suffered throughout his life as we shall see presently.

The administrative power and the powerful Diwan system helped the growth of a thriving economy based on commerce and agriculture. Soon this reflected itself in the stratification of society into categories of the rich and the poor. People's appetites for acquiring riches were whetted by the spectacle of riches pouring into the pockets and treasures of rich Baṣrīs. Poets exerted themselves in covering long distances to secure wealth:

1. Agh., xxi, 40; cf. vi, 3-5.
The daughter of the Ghawthī says, "Why are you here whereas you are a Tamīmī whose territory lies in the east?"
And I told her that desires, in addition to overwhelming anxiety begetting me, cause the youth to traverse distances.\[316\]^1

To acquire wealth became the major concern of people:-

I have written to you seeking wealth either at your hands or at the hands of your father, al-Haytham.\[317\]^2

Jarīr, in satirizing al-Farazdaq, jeered at him for following a course he should not have followed had he been true to his convictions. When the latter approached the Qaysī al-muhājar, Jarīr said:-

I can see that when God withheld riches from you, you returned to Qays, humiliated.\[318\]^3

But wealth is a scarce commodity, and only the lucky few could hope to acquire it. The masses whose hopes are inevitably dashed in pursuit of better standards often bear their sufferings with fortitude and patience, though some might direct their energies to anti-social activities to secure what has escaped them through lawful pursuits. The poverty and degradation of these people often featured in poetry addressed to caliphs and their governors as we have seen in the previous chapter. But this discrepancy in wealth, wide as it was, did not leave a clear impression on poetry. Although much poetry dwelt at great length on depicting poverty and suffering, scarcely any poetry, not even that of Khārijīs, dwells on exposing the defects of the wealthy and the resentment of the poor against them.\[4\]^4

---

1. Far., i, 84.
2. Ibid., ii, 201.
for complaint as far as the rich members of their respective groups were concerned. The many cases in which an individual as al-Farazdaq could rely on the liberality of his rich kinsmen are evidence of the co-operative spirit that informed their relations. Outsiders, too, were sometimes apt to give a helping hand in adversity. Asmāʾ ibn-Khārija of Fazāra passed by al-Farazdaq, and saw him smearing his camel with tar, and said, "O Farazdaq, your poetry has become unsaleable, and sovereigns have thrown you away to the extent that you have been reduced to treating your camels! I offer you a hundred camels." The poet sang his praise in gratitude. The prominence of al-Farazdaq ensured the survival of this anecdote for us, but there is no cause for doubting the recurrence of similar acts with many other individuals of whom we have no record. The liberality of dignitaries like Yazīd ibn-al-Muhallab, Mālik ibn-Nismaʾ, ‘Umar ibn-‘Ubaydallāh ibn-Maʾmar, Bilāl ibn-Abī-Burda and many others is almost legendary.

But the nature of such a diversified and competitive community is such that it evokes a variety of responses ranging from apathy and resignation to bitterness and frustration. The philosophizing attitude which is informed by religion, bordering on absolute resignation is represented by the attitude of ‘Urwa ibn-Udhayna who said:—

2. Agh., xix, 35.
3. cf. ‘Iqd, i, 224, 231, 233-236.
I have known - extravagance not being one of my qualities - that what has been destined as my sustenance would come to me, I endeavour to [obtain] it, but the endeavour irks me, and had I sat [waiting for it], it would have come to me without trouble, How much property and manifest amounts of unstinted sustenance have I acquired and consumed, And neither have I become insolent in consequence of affluence, nor has my soul been humbled because of a hardship afflicting me, I am noble of character, and my soul never tells me that God will ever leave me without sustenance.[319][1]

The effect of fatalist ideas, rife at the time, on some individuals was complete resignation, as in the case of Abū-Ḥarb, the son of Abū-'l-Aswad ad-Du‘alī who was said to have refused to leave his father's house and to engage in any profitable work, dismissing his father's misgivings by saying, "If I am entitled to any sustenance it will come to me."[2] Whether such attitude was a direct result of indoctrination by the theological schools who asserted the prevalence of God's decrees - immensely utilized by Umayyads to break resistance to their regime - is an open question. Abū-'l-Aswad told him:-

Livelihood is not earned by wishing, but by sending your bucket down with others, An act securing for you on one day a bucketful of pure water and on another mud and scanty water.[320][3]

Nevertheless the arbitrariness of the apportionment worried people. Abū-'l-Aswad saw in it the finger of fate:-

I marvel at this world and the covetousness of those inhabiting it, seeing that sustenance is apportioned between them, But what excites my wonder most is [the paradox resulting in] the fool receiving sustenance in plenty and the prudent deprived of livelihood,

---

1. Agh., xxi, 164; Murtaḍā, Amālī, ii, 69.  
2. Agh., xi, 117; Aswad, 186.  
3. Aswad, 187; Irshād, iv, 281; Agh., xi, 122.
And only then was my wonder dispelled, having realized that the matter is one of sustenance dispensed according to a stipulated schedule.[321]

Others were inclined to dismiss it, recognizing that wealth by itself, could not transform a man completely, as in the line of al-Farazdaq on al-Muhallab:–

Do not imagine that a few dirhams you have amassed, will efface your shameful record at Oman ['Uman].[322]

But in any case, wealth brings with it a code of behaviour not always congenial to the taste of old acquaintances. Şakhr ibn-Ŷabanā' once rebuked his richer brother, al-Mughīra, saying:–

I see that when you have acquired some wealth, and noticed the straits in which a ferocious time has landed us, You persisted in charging me falsely with committing crimes, please desist and do not make your wealth a reproach to us.[323]

Abū-'1-Aswad told an old friend of his:–

Is it because of a good [fortune], your acquiring of which pleased me, that you changed your attitude towards me, so that I mistook you for a ferocious lion?[324]

The vices of a commercial community are obvious. People tend to cheat to obtain easy money. Ru’ba is said to have called the banking quarter of Baṣra, 'dār as-Ẓalīmān', (the abode of the unjust), and the name stuck for a long time.5

Abū-'1-Aswad preserved for us many instances of the behaviour

1. Aswad, 236.
3. Mub., Kāmil, iii, 12.
4. Aswad, 125; cf. also, Aswad, 248-249; Sīrāfī, Akhbar, 92-93; 'Ajj., 39-40; Ru’b., 99-100.
5. Agh., xxi, 89.
of traders in this respect. He revealed the trick of the trader Withāq:-

Withāq desires [to acquire] my she-camel, and [at the same time] he exposes its faults, seeking to beguile me in respect of it,
And I told him, "Know well, O Withāq, that it is an inviolate enclosure forbidden to you for ever."[325]

Of Aws ibn-‘Āmir, another camel dealer, he said:-

Aws ibn-‘Āmir approached me concerning my she-camel entitled at-Tayfā’; at the time of its training, so that he might beguile me with respect to it,
And he made a desperately small offer, for which even the money was not ready, bringing forth with him a soul wholeheartedly given to fraud,
And I retorted by swearing, "Had I been given double your price, you would not have led it by the head - keen as you are to acquire it."[326]

The dishonesty of Nāfi’, the poet’s servant and trading agent, is conveyed to us in realistic terms:-

If you are ever in search of someone who would honour trust, leave Nāfi’ aside, and look for someone else, capable of undertaking it,
For the lad is a deceitful liar whose evil soul is detested by its closest friend,
Whenever he finds himself alone with something in his trust, the whole or part of it is misappropriated,
If he fails to get it in the morning, he will eventually declare his bankruptcy regarding it or [pretend] that demand for it has slackened,
And he will waste it away until it is reduced to an insignificant size, assailed by all kinds of subterfuge,
Yet he is the most enduring of men with regards to fatness, as it is the case with dogs, the fattest among them being most given to stealing.[327]

The existence of widespread poverty amidst modest wealth entailed the adoption of begging as a means of obtaining livelihood on a large scale. The practice of major Baṣrī

1. Aswad, 111-112; Agh., xi, 115.
2. Aswad, 113; Agh., xi, 115; cf. also Aswad, 146-147; 172-173.
3. Aswad, 166-167; Agh., xi, 121; cf. also Aswad, 224.
poets in this respect needs no further mention here. The predominance of the practice is further attested by the involvement of poets representing other groups. Thus the Khārījī poet, 'Imrān ibn-Ḥīṭṭān, whose poetry on asceticism has been treated elsewhere, employed a unique religious argument to achieve the object of his request:-

I have felt a need which, I presume, will be satisfied if I approach you regarding it,
If there is profit for me in accepting the gift, yet is the profit greater for you in giving it,
For you will ultimately secure absolute [divine] rewards, together with my thanks in this world; thus is your portion the heavier [in the scales].[328]

The poetry of Abū-'l-Aswad, despite his exhortations to the contrary, abounds in requests and in invectives against those who failed to respond favourably to his demands. In one of his long poems he gives advice on how to approach patrons of different characters. He starts with the line:-

Whenever you approach a generous man seeking to satisfy a need, your meeting and greeting him should be sufficient.[329] He proceeds to advise caution in overtaxing him with requests if he delays his response. But in the case of the avaricious he advises a different approach:-

When you request a base man to satisfy a need, falter not in persistence, using gentleness,
And make the front of his door your residence, holding to it tightly as the creditor holds a debtor.[330]

1. Khaw., 27, No.49.
5. Ibid., 236.
Abū-’l-Aswad, further, furnishes an apt example of another social phenomenon arising from inadequacy of resources in a competitive community. His proverbial stinginess is frequently quoted by chroniclers.¹ He told his detractors once:—

They blame me regarding stinginess out of ignorance and misguidance, whereas being stingy is better than being reduced to begging from a stingy man.[331]²

He explained his strict philosophy on financial transactions to a friend who wanted to give him a carpet as a present, but the poet refused to accept it as such, insisting on paying a price for it, saying:—

Sell me, O Nasīb, and do not give me [anything] as a reward, for I never ask a reward [from anyone], or recompense the one offering it, for the gift is best when you put it in the right place, when you consider praise and reward rightly due, and there is a kind of gift which turns out to be a source of loss, enduring blame, and false reproach, I have fathomed men’s chronicles and deeds, achieving thereby immense knowledge and experience, so when I give a promise I act as a debtor who recognizes the debt he contracted and invites a scribe [to record it], until I fulfil it according to my promise, though none but me need call for the fulfilment, and whenever I act I act without [expecting] reckoning, your Lord being sufficient in rewarding and reckoning, and when I deny [somebody a gift] my denial is categorical, relieving the supplicant of much importunity, I never purchase short-lived praise at a price of ever enduring blame.[332]³

Poverty drove others to break the law and adopt highway robbery and larceny as a means of obtaining livelihood. A poet of this category, Fur‘ān ibn-al-‘Araf of Tamīm, left us his impressions in three lines, in which he tried to justify his conduct:—

2. ‘Iqd, vii, 220.
3. Aswad, 212-213; Agh., xi, 111.
Some men say that Furʿān is a transgressor, whereas it is surely God who has apportioned to me my children, and my property.

Four of them males like vultures, and four females, still feeding from the breast, making their total eight dishevelled human beings,

Who, when food is prepared - spare none for the absent and care nothing for him who is away.[333]

The upshot of all these tendencies was the eventual growth of social relationships based - in contradistinction to the traditional tribal bonds - on an individual rather than a communal basis. The drive to seek power and wealth in the company of the emir or caliph, heightened the growth of personal relationships. Prominent figures such as Ḥaritha ibn-Badr, a chieftain of Tamīm, Anas ibn-Zunaym, ibn-Mufarrigh and others came to be known more through their personal friendships with emirs than through their tribal records. Their competition to secure the favour of the patron created a remarkable category of literature running parallel to that evoked by the rivalry between tribal poets, and in most cases utilizing the same form of munāqada. The emphasis here, however, is on the individual and his personal merits and defects. The intense rivalry between Ḥaritha and Anas - close associates of ʿUbaydallah ibn-Ziyād, who seemed to have enjoyed instigating them - revolved mainly round this central theme of betrayal of friends. When Ḥaritha composed the two lines on Anas:–

I have changed heart regarding Anas, whose friendship is all deceit and treachery,

I perceive him to be versed in harming friends - the worst of friends being those given to mischief.[334]

1. Ibn-Qut., Sh., ii, 627.
Anas readily replied:

    Of treachery and ungratefulness, O most evil of friends,
    you hold the [full] register,
    I have known him as such in olden times [as intimately]
    as the eye is known to its pupil. [335]

The intense personal relationship between patron and protégé comes out clearly in the lines of Anas addressed to ‘Ubaydallah:

    Ask my emir what caused him to change heart about his
    relation with me which he has forsaken,
    Do not humiliate me after your honouring me - for it is
    hard to discontinue a habit. [336]

It is not amiss to mention here that ideological differences as well as partisan leanings also tended somewhat to weaken the traditional communal solidarity and to encourage individualism. The case of Abū-‘l-Aswad is also instructive here. As a dedicated Shi‘ī he found himself amidst a community that did not share his views and was openly hostile to him. His ‘Uthmānī neighbours of Banū-Qushayr used to stone his house at night and claim that it was God who did it. [337] Such intense hostility, and the concomitant feeling of alienation, invariably generate intense feelings of friendship among members of alienated communities. The obsession of Abū-‘l-Aswad with friendship is attested by the numerous references to it in his diwan - itself an autobiographical plea for friendship. [338] The remonstrances and reproofs he

1. Ibid.; cf. also 24; Aswad, 126, 127, 127-129, 130 for a series of similar interchanges.
addressed to his friends underline his acute sensitiveness to matters of loyalty and betrayal in friendly relations.

After indicating his long suffering in his lines:-

I have become so much accustomed to affliction that it has become a habit of mine, prolonged suffering having caused me to resign myself to patience,
Too much suffering has increased my capacity to endure injury, and how often has my patience worn thin about it in the past,
Unless I accept as a matter of course all that Time brings against me, my reproach of Time will be endless.[337]

He records a number of failures in his attempt to forge friendly relations, and advocates caution in one's handling of friends:-

Whenever you love, exercise moderation in your passion, since you don't know when it will change,
And whenever you hate, sever not all bonds, for you don't know when friendship will be restored.[338]

But once friendship is created, forbearance is essential:-

If you do not forgive a friend who has erred, but punish him whenever he slips,
You will be friendless; so be easy-going, and accept his apologies whenever he offers one.[339]

Abū-'l-Aswad's poetry on friendship is in direct contrast to his poetry on tribal and communal relations. He did in one line boast of his people's valour:-

I belong to a people who - when they wage a war against an enemy - mount the attack with youths who dash forward like meteorites.[340]

But elsewhere his attitude is different. His intense feeling of the Islamic bond is evident despite a line in which he

1. Aswad, 227-228; Yāq., Irshād, iv, 282.
3. Ibid., 138-139; Agh., xi, 116.
5. Ibid., 134.
mentioned Islam alongside ancestral glory.¹ In adducing the reasons preventing him from slandering his kinsmen he said:-

Deterring me from foolishness, obscenity and slandering of kinsmen are four traits; My reserve, my being a Muslim, my mildness and my nobility - the like of me being capable of causing harm and good.²

But the dissolution of communal solidarity is made clear in another poem where he declares his independence of his people:-

Though my people be the owners of sheep and camels and numerous herds, the grazing grounds of which cannot be numbered, Yet have I no need of their wealth or their glory so long as the returning traveller races his shadow. Your relationship to me was like drizzle, whoever grazes beyond it is restricted, and whoever seeks fertile land [therein] finds barrenness.³

Once the communal bond is weakened or disrupted, other bonds had to be sought to replace it, and hence the ceaseless endeavour of Abū-ʿl-Aswad to seek friends outside his tribal group. The same attitude can also be seen among the Khārijī poets whose poetry seethes with sentiments regarding the fallen friends as we have seen earlier in the case of ʿImrān ibn-Ḥiṭṭān and his reaction to the death of his friend Abū-Ḥilal Mirdās ibn-Udayya.⁴

---

¹ Ibid., 165; cf. p. 262 above, verse No.287.
² Ibid., 149-150; Agh., xi, 117.
³ Aswad, 249.
⁴ cf. Khaw., Nos. 5, 13, 20, 27, 50, 62, 70, 73, 77, 84, 93, 95, etc.
iii. THE ʿAWALĪ

The settlement of Arabs in the ʿмир brought them into direct contact with the local population - called ʿArnabāṭ (Nabataeans) - who tilled the agricultural lands in their vicinity, as well as with Persian prisoners of war who were brought into the area in their thousands. But the conquest only brought to a head a process which had been going on - if only on a very limited scale - for a long time before Islam. The eastern tribes of Arabia were in close proximity to Persians, and some of them as in the case of Banū-ʿl-ʿAmmī (or al-ʿAmm) became Persianized, a state inviting against them the invectives of Jarīr at a later date. Reports about Arab chiefs married to Persian women are current as in the case of al-Midhabba, the mother of Qufayra, the great grandmother of al-Farazdaq who was said to have been given by Chosroes to Zūraʾa ibn-ʿUdūs of Darim, an incident providing Jarīr with his main argument against his rival al-Farazdaq. The conquest made it commonplace for Arabs to take Persian slave girls for wives, a practice resulting in a huge class of half-breeds entitled hujanā (sing. hajīn, i.e. one born of non-Arab mother). Traditionally such individuals were deemed inferior and the ʿJahilīs denied them the right of inheritance. The policy of Umayyads was said to have been against their appointment as

2. cf. ʿTab., i, 2535-2538.
3. cf. Chapter III, 131, No.31 above.
4. Naq., 211.
5. ʿIqd., vii, 143.
caliphs, the argument being that Arabs would not pay allegiance to them.1 Yet many of them,2 being sons of outstanding Arab fathers, secured high positions in the state, and this in turn exposed them to the virulent attacks of satirists. The sensitivity of their position in society is born out by the encounter of the family of Ziyād who ruled Baṣra from 65/665 to 64/683 with Yazīd ibn-Mufarrigh, himself a mawla, claiming a Ḫimyarī lineages.3 His main line of attack rested on the charge that they were of foreign origin. He started by questioning the fictitious device by which Muʿāwiya, the first Umayyad caliph claimed the brotherhood of Ziyād ibn-Abīhī.

He told Muʿāwiya:—

Now convey to Muʿāwiya, son of Ḥarb, an urgent message from the Yemeni man:
Would you be angry when told that your father was chaste and feel content when told that he was an adulterer? I bear witness that your relationship to Ziyād is similar to that of the elephant to the offspring of a she-ass,
And that she (i.e. Sumayya) conceived of Ziyād while Sakhr was away from her.[345]4

The poet also puzzled over the social status of each of the three sons of this Sumayya thus underlining the complexity of the social system under which the three sons of one mother enjoy three different positions:—

1. Ibid., vii, 144; thus Maslama ibn-ʿAbd-al-Malik (63-120/682-738) forfeited his right of accession because his mother was non-Arab. It was only in 126/744 that Yazīd III whose mother was a Sughdī slave acceded to the throne following a revolution.
2. cf. Chapter I, p. 48 n. 4.
Ziyād, Ṣumayya, and Abū-Bakra strike me as being the wonder of wonders, in the sense that the three of them were fashioned in the womb of a single female with three different lineages, one of them claims to be a Qurashi, the other a mawla, while the third claims his cousin to be an Arab.\[^{344}\]

He then rebutted the claim of Ziyād that his mother Ṣumayya was from Tamīm:-

I swear that neither Ziyād belonged to Quraysh nor Ṣumayya to Tamīm, but, rather they are the progeny of a slave deeply rooted in baseness, and of a harlot.\[^{345}\]

And he told ‘Abbad and ‘Ubaydallāh, the sons of Ziyād:-

O ‘Abbad, baseness is ever attached to you, and you have neither a mother nor a father among Quraysh, and tell ‘Ubaydallāh: You have no real father and nobody knows your pedigree.\[^{346}\]

He claims that their origin was Nabataean and tells them so:-

Now inform ‘Ubaydallāh, the ‘Ubayd (i.e. minor slave) of baseness, the slave of Banu-‘ilaj, on my behalf: You have claimed descent from the noble lords of Quraysh, leaving, after your act, no room for disputation in matters of faith, Show me whether Yathrib (i.e. Medina) encompasses a Zandward - a village of your vile Nabataean ancestors.\[^{347}\]

He demands that they return to where they belong and engage in the menial work of tilling the land in their village of Zandward:-

Certainly the ‘Ubayd (i.e. minor slave) and what his wife produced belong to slaves begotten of adulterous mothers who perform no prayers, At Zandward, where you should take your hoes, replacing the waist-wrappers with Persian breeches.\[^{348}\]

---

1. Ziyād was son of Abū-Sufyān; Ṣumayya was said to be the son of al-Ḥarīth ibn-Kalāda of Thaqif, while Abū-Bakra was the son of Nufay' ibn-Masrūḥ, an Abyssinian slave.
2. Ibn-Qut., Sh., 1, 323.
3. Agh., xvii, 67; Ṣumayya was a Persian slave; cf. E.I, "Abū Bakra", by Houtsma.
5. Ibid., 65; cf. also 64, 65, 66, 67, 68.
Earlier (about 53/672) al-Farazdaq stressed the Persian origin of Ziyād when he rebuked Miskīn ad-Dārīmī for lamenting the death of Ziyād, telling him:

"Would you mourn the death of an infidel from Maysan who behaved in his time like Chosroes or Caesar?"[349] 

The satirization of the family of Ziyād by Ibn-Mufarrigh became so widespread and damaging to their reputation that ‘Abbād and ‘Ubaydallāh arrested the poet and subjected him to all kinds of torture and persecution and only the intervention of the caliph (Mu‘āwiya or Yazīd I) spared his life. 

The Arabs’ consciousness of their race as distinct from their non-Arab subjects was heightened the closer they came into contact with the latter. The feeling of uneasiness, and sometimes of horror, at the adulteration of their pure race by foreigners is strongly reflected in satirical interchanges between poets. The device, noted earlier through which poets declared their opponents non-Arab, was not entirely without basis. As has been pointed out the great grandmother of al-Farazdaq was Persian, and the mother of al-Ba‘Īth was actually a slave-girl from Isfahān. 

1. Far., i, 201.
and half-breeds was immense, as appears from the plea of al-
Aḥnaf on their behalf to Muʿāwiya.¹ This mixed breeding
exposed many to invectives of dissatisfied poets. 'Amr ibn
'Afrāʾ of Ḍabba who incurred the displeasure of al-Farazdaq
occasioned the lines:

Had he been a Ḍabbi I would have forgiven him even though
his snakes and scorpions crawled over my foot,
But alas he is a Diyafi (i.e. Syrian Nabataean) on the
side of both parents, his relatives currently pressing
oil at Hawran.[350]²

Ṣāliḥ ibn-Kudayr of (Opûn who was rich but stingy was censured
by the same poet:

If you ask the elders of .Opûn's family your lineage will
be traced back to an outsider of shameful record,
How many an outsider there is in the hamlets of Ḫaysan -
rustic, his palms tattooed - who is a relative of
Ṣāliḥ's.[351]³

The proximity of some Arab tribes to these "Anbāṭ" laid
them open to the charge of foreignness. This is apparent in
the satire of al-Farazdaq on the tribe of Ṭayyi'. He once
said:

Ṭayyi' is nothing but tribes driven from all sides to
[settle] among the dwellers of 'Ayn at-Tamr,
No Ṭaʾī woman would ever know who her father was, not
even if she asked every skilful genealogist about
her pedigree.[352]⁴

On another occasion he called them Nabataeans:

I never feared that Ṭayyi' would slander me, seeing that
they were but Nabataeans, who never wrapped turbans
round their heads,

1. cf. Chapter I, p. 48 above.
2. Far., i, 46;  Diyaf was a Syrian hamlet, cf. Naq., 29.
3. Ibid., i, 124; on others cf. Ibid., i, 119, 172;
   Arch., xix, 24.
4. Far., i, 41.
[They are] Nabataean villagers whose mothers never covered their faces with shawls or felt the touch of sharp razors [in circumcision], And the Ta'ī never knows the origin of his father even if he asks every learned man about Tayyi',
Nothing gives protection to a Ta'ī but a piece of lead stamped by the government of the day,1
Whenever a Ta'ī comes down to a place with his body free from tattooing, he is fair game (i.e. enslaved) to whoever lays hand on him.[353]2

The same poet similarly derided the Azd when he called them 'the Nabataeans of Iraq'.3 Their acquaintance with these Nabataeans made parallels easy as in the lines of Jarīr on Ṣalīṭ:—

Ṣalīṭ as their name indicates are sharp-tongued, and were it not for the Banū-'Amr who are noble, I would have said that they were Diyafis or Nabataeans. [354]4

It is evident that the Arabs detested the fusion of foreign blood even from the mother's side as al-Farazdaq indicated in his praise of 'Abbād ibn-'Abbād ibn-'Alqama:—

Having a broad forehead, noble of root and sons, having never known the taste of [milk from] the breasts of a slave mother.[355]5

It seemed that such a slave wife or concubine did not enjoy a respectable social status as in the remark of al-Farazdaq concerning his daughter Makkiyya whose mother was a Negro:—

If you do not count her mother as one of your womenfolk, certainly her father is a father who does not discredit her.[356]6

1. See below, pp. 296-7.
3. Far., ii, 270.
5. Far., i, 170.
6. 'Iqd, vii, 104.
The marriage of a mawla to an Arab girl (harīra) was a rarity at the beginning and the practice was always hedged with difficulties. But as the social standing of the mawlā improved through acquisition of wealth and Arab culture cases of such marriages are reported here and there. Yaḥyā ibn-Abī-Ḥafṣa was at the centre of an intense controversy for doing just this. His father Abū-Ḥafṣa was a Jewish mawla of 'Uthmān, freed shortly before the caliph's assassination in 35/656. Yaḥyā asked 'Amra, daughter of Ibrāhīm ibn-an-Nu‘mān-ibn-Bashir the Anṣārī in marriage from her father and paid a handsome dowry. The proposal aroused a violent storm of protests from his Arab contemporaries who attempted forcing the father to reject the offer, but the latter refused to give in to their pressure. The following lines, possibly by his detractors, were attributed to him:

The twenty thousand [dirhams] left no room for idle talk, and I do not bother about what slanderers say,
In giving [my daughter] in marriage to a mawla I am impelled by an established tradition, and by the love of dirhams.[357]

The marriage of the same Yaḥyā to another Tamīmī girl, Khawla daughter of Muqāṭīl ibn-Ṭulba ibn-Qays ibn-’Āsim engendered a greater wave of hostility and provoked many poets. The Baṣrī poet al-Qulākh al-‘Anbarī reacted by saying:

1. cf. Chapter I, p. 47 above.
2. Ibn-Mu‘tazz, Tabaqat, 44.
3. Ibid., 44; ‘Iqd, vii, 145-146.
I was told that Khawla — when he gave her in marriage — said: Long have I expected disgrace at your hands, You have married [your daughters] to two slaves desiring the benefits of their wealth — may you chew, for what you have desired, dust and stone —, How excellent are the noble horses (i.e. daughters) put under your charge, which now you have debased despite marks of nobility on their feet and foreheads.[358]¹

When the poet learnt that the dowry was paid in clothes he said:-

Peace be on the remnants of Qays ibn-‘Āsim, decayed and rotten as they are in the grave, Would you waste away noble Arab horses (i.e. girls) rendering them worthless so that they have none but the mawali for husbands? Never have I seen clothes more inviting to disgrace, nor a more debased wearer or a worse bestower of clothes. [359]²

The incident promptedJarīr to compose scabrous lines which may be more discreetly translated:-

I perceive that Muqatil, son of the noble Tulba, allowed the mawali to fornicate his daughters, You have married [your daughters] to a slave, progeny of a slave, of those redhaired ones with disfigured beaids. Do not boast of Qays, for you have disgraced his memory. [360]³

The hostility of Arabs in general to marrying their daughters to mawali is corroborated by the testimony of a half-breed (hajīn) late in the Umayyad era praising the Ibaḍīs, a Khariji sect, who advocated equality:-

We have found our Dastawanīs, who are steadfast in fasting and piety, Better than you in glory and faith, may God disgrace the haughty ones, Is there among you one who marries [his daughter] to one born of a slave-girl?[361]⁴

1. Ibn-Cūt., Sh., ii, 739-740; Mub., Kamīl, iv, 213; ‘Iqd, vii, 146; Ibn-Mu‘tazz, op.cit., 44.
3. Ibid., 215.
4. Bayān, i, 43.
Nor was it in connection with marriage alone that hostility was manifested. Arabs did not conceal their disdain of the mawāli or entertain any doubt as to their inferiority. Jarīr said:

The fore-feathers of the wing are not fashioned in the same way as the bird's tail, nor are the mawāli like those of pure descent.[362]

Their social inferiority is pointed out by Dhū-'r-Rumma in praising Bilāl ibn-Abī-Burda:

[You are] seas [of bounty], rulers, judges and chiefs when other people become mawāli.[363]

The glaring disregard for their feelings as human beings in comparison with Arabs appear in the line of Jarīr on Ṭu‘ma ibn-Qurt who demanded a price for entertaining him when he had come to him as a guest:

They said: Purchase from us a she-camel for slaughter, and I told them: Sell [it] to the mawāli but feel ashamed of [displaying such niggardliness to] Arabs.

Sometimes such derogatory remarks infuriated them and drove some of them to reply. When Jarīr said:

Do not seek a maternal relationship among Taghhib, for Negroes are nobler than they as maternal uncles.[365]

a Negro, Riyāḥ ibn-Sunayḥ answered him, defending his people and attacking Jarīr.

The ignominy to which al-Ḥajjāj subjected them when he returned them to their villages, stamping on their hands the

2. Rumma, 660.
3. Jar., 46; for their reaction to this depreciation, cf. Mub., Kamil, iv, 193.
names of their hamlets, was expressed by a rajiz in his lines:

A girl who did not know how to drive camels was by al-
Hajjaj caused to go out of a place of concealment and
shelter,
Were Badr and Ibn-Hamal present, your palms would not
have been marked without protest.\[366\]

This marking 'naqsh' continued to be a sign of humiliation to
the mawali and poets exploited it in satire as did al-Farazdaq
earlier in his satire on Tayyi'.\[2\] Another poet satirized a
mawla saying:

You are the one whose palm was marked by the 'Ijlī,\[3\] whereas your old father fled seeking refuge with
al-Ḥakam.\[4][367]\[5

A further mark of their degradation was the treatment they
received when they joined the army.\[6\] The verses of Ḥarītha
ibn-Badr concerning them which we have noted earlier\[7\] bear out
their inferior status. They suffered many other social
disabilities\[8\] and certain social functions, not necessarily
mean in themselves, were deemed worthy of them such as giving
testimonies in courts\[9\] and religious studies.\[10\] The learning
of a mawla was no guarantee of any social standing. When
'Abdallāh ibn-al-Ḥaḍrami\[11\] criticized the poetry of al-Farazdaq,

1. 'Iqd, iii, 368; Mub., Kamīl, v, 10.
2. cf. p. 292 above, verse No.353.
3. One of Banū-Saʿd of 'Ijl commissioned by al-Ḥajjāj to
deport the mawalī.
4. al-Ḥakam ibn-Ayyūb, the deputy of al-Ḥajjāj in Baṣra.
5. 'Iqd, iii, 367; cf. also 368.
6. cf. 'Iqd, v, 163 for practices of Muʿawiya, 'Abd-al-Malik
and Hisam.
7. P. 275 No.315 above.
11. cf. Chapter 1, p. 64 above.
the poet dismissed him by saying:—

Had 'Abdallāh been a mawla I would have censured him, but 'Abdallāh is only a mawla of some mawali.[368]

He reacted in a similar way in his encounter with 'Anbasa al-Fīl, the grammarian who used to learn the poetry of Jarīr and to prefer him to al-Farazdaq. He found it sufficient to remind the mawla scholar of his father, Ma‘dān who was the tender of an elephant belonging to the emir of Bašra 'Abdallāh ibn-‘Āmir of Ziyād:—

There lay in Ma‘dān and the elephant a sufficient deterrent for 'Anbasa who is transmitting odes against me.[369]

The sensitivity of 'Anbasa to this satire was such that when he was asked about it he substituted "al-lu‘m: baseness" for "elephant" an act prompting the enquirer to say, "Certainly an object from which you seek refuge in baseness is a grave thing."[3]

Yet the progress of the mawālī was spectacular and many Arabs could do nothing beside expressing their uneasy feelings in mere words. Abū-'1-Aswad and Ḥarītha ibn-Badr were sitting near a public road when they saw the dignitaries of Bašra going to the public bath of Fīl, the mawla of Ziyād, after a feast celebrating the completion of this mawla's new house. The spectacle of such great men riding in the company of a rich mawla grieved them immensely. Abū-'1-Aswad reflected:—

1. Nuzha, 11; Bughya, 282.
2. Sirāfī, Akhbar, 24; Nuzha, 7; Irshād, vi, 91; Bughya, 368.
3. Ibid.
[I swear] by your father's life that the bath of Chosroes did not amount to two thirds of that of Fil.[370]\(^1\)

Haritha finished the dialogue:-

And that our hurrying behind the mawālī was not our custom at the time of the Messenger [of God],[371]\(^2\)

The preponderance of these foreign elements\(^3\) and their achievement in all walks of life, helped to minimize social friction between Arabs and mawālī in the migr. Despite the preceding remarks about Arab hostility to them, the general picture in Baṣra was one of tolerance. An index of this general amity was that such a large community of mawālī who produced the major philologists, grammarians, traditionists, qurrā’ and others who set Baṣra firmly on the path of cultural achievement, failed to produce a single poet to voice their grievances, except Bashshār whose mature development belongs rather to the ‘Abbāsid period.\(^4\) It is true that certain philologists such as ‘Abdallāh ibn-al-Ḥadrāmī and ‘Īsa ibn-‘Umar were regarded by contemporaries as anti-Arab,\(^5\) and that ‘Ubaydallāh ibn-Ziyād was the first to order the collection of anecdotes disparaging Arabs,\(^6\) but on the whole the tone of both sides seemed to have been tolerant. Poets in their sober moods did recognize the glories and merits of Persians. The term ‘banū-‘l-Aḥrār’ (Offsprings of free men)\(^7\) recurs

\(^1\) Agh., xxı, 43; Bal., Futūḥ, 494.
\(^3\) cf. Chapter I, 48, 61.
\(^4\) cf. Chapter I, 60.
\(^5\) Nuzhā, 11; Bughya, 282; Muwash., 41.
\(^6\) cf. Chapter III, p. 122 above.
\(^7\) cf. Suḥaylī, ar-Rawd al-‘Unuf (Cairo, 1914), i, 55; Ibn-Shajarātī, Amālij, i, 174.
frequently in poetry referring to ancient Persians, a theme exploited by Bashshār at a later date. The emotional bonds that bound many Arabs to them through marriage and the like were destined to leave their mark on their attitudes. Al-Farazdaq said regarding his daughter whose mother seemed to have been Persian:—

What if her maternal uncle was of the folk of Chosroes? Chosroes was better than 'Iqāl, [In that] he received more capitation fees, and in being more steadfast when spears cross [in battle]. [372]

Jarīr said of his personal experience with his Persian wife:—

You have increased my affection for the people of Rayy and have endeared the mawali manyfold to me. [373]

In praising his son from her, Bilāl, he said:—

Bilāl is not disgraced by his mother, his maternal and paternal uncles being different, His sweat smells like musk, it is unlawful to Muslims to slander him. [374]

It was not long before Bilāl himself boasted of his maternal uncles in an interchange with a half-brother of his who used to jeer at him:—

Many a maternal uncle of mine, white-faced and bright, from the family of Chosroes, was crowned, Unlike a maternal uncle of yours called 'Ashnaj. [375]

The rajaz poet Abū-Nukhayla, despite his endeavours to acquire an Arab lineage among the Banū-Tamīm which invited against him

---

1. cf. Far., i, 269, 307; ii, 111.
2. Agh., iii, 33.
3. Ibid., xix, 21; Far., ii, 95.
the sarcasm of Ru‘bāl and al-Farazdaq, could equally boast of his Persian blood when he said:—

I am the son of Sa‘d but I occupy a good position among Persians thus securing the best of maternal and paternal uncles.

The influence of the mawālī in the Umayyad court and their contribution to the success of their policies impelled Jarīr to praise them, and to go out of his way to declare their equality with Arabs, basing his claims on the fiction that the Arabs and Persians derive their origin from Abraham. He said about 102/720:—

The offspring of Isaac are lions when they put on the sword-belts of death, cladding themselves in armour, One day they are clad in armour, the other in silk and finely woven garments, When they boast they count among their dignitaries Ṣabahbadh, Chosroes, the family of Hurmuzan and Caesar, You perceive among them those who are steadfast in guidance, and the one crowned among them could assume the gait of a powerful satrap, White-faced as an excellent stallion-camel when he puts on buttoned coat of mail over Coptic linen, They used to have a Book and a Prophecy among them, and they were monarchs at Iṣṭaḥkr and Tustar, Al-Wad‘dāh, marked in battle, has exerted his utmost, bequeathing thereby to the people of Barbar a lasting glory,

Our father, the father of Isaac, binds us together — a father who was a rightly guided and purified Prophet, From us was Solomon, the Prophet who invoked [God], and was given an edifice and a subservient domain,

2. cf. Agh., xviii, 142.  
4. cf. Ṭab., i, 433.  
5. He was a Barbarī mawālī of Banū-Umayya who excelled in suppressing the revolt of Yazīd ibn-al-Muhallab in 102/720.
And also Moses, Jesus and that one who fell prostrate, his tears causing green growth to sprout, And Jacob whom God increased in wisdom, while the son of Jacob was fashioned an honest man, Thus what binds us together with the noble progeny of Sarah is a forefather after whom we need not trouble with any who were obscure, Our father is the companion of God (i.e. Abraham), and God is our Lord, and we are content with what He gave and decreed.[377]\(^1\)

A report mentions that when Jarīr composed this poem he was greatly honoured by the mawālī and received more than a hundred set of clothes (hulal).\(^2\)

---

CHAPTER VI
POETRY AND CULTURAL CHANGE

The central position of poetry in the evolution of the various genres of culture for which Basra became famous cannot be overstated. Being the most significant product of Arab genius it dominated — in Islam as well as in the Jahiliyya — the Arab mind and decisively influenced the course of many an intellectual trend. The high regard in which it came to be held by the Umayyads restored to it the respectability which early Islam attempted to tarnish.¹ Theological, philosophical, philological and related disciplines which were developing at the same time were obviously deemed — by comparison — of inferior status in official estimation. One gets the impression that those who engaged themselves in such sciences were regarded with suspicion and in many cases their loyalty to the regime was questioned. Thus most of the philologists with the exception of Abū-'Amr ibn-al-‘Alā'² were suspected of being either Khārijīs,³ Shi‘īs,⁴ of doubtful faith⁵ or wilfully anti-Arab.⁶ The caliphs and their emirs did not much encourage scholars who were bent on laying the foundations of sciences, and these achieved maturity only after the downfall of the dynasty. A learned man such as Qatada ibn-Di‘āma as-

1. cf. Chapter II.
2. cf. Yaq., Irshād, vii, 164-165.
3. Ibid., vi, 140; Nuzha, 8.
4. 'Iqd, ii, 47; Irshād, vii, 297.
5. Nuzha, 17, 84.
Sadūsī (d. 117/735) who, in posterity, achieved his reputation as an authority in Tradition, received what favours the Umayyad caliphs showered on him on the strength of his encyclopaedic knowledge of poetry and Arab lore. Already immense, the popularity of poetry was heightened by official policy and by the resultant desire of Arab tribes to revive their past glories and give poets a voice of authority that none could fail to recognize. Jāhili poetry, being the authentic voice of pure Arabs, gradually became the hallmark by which chasteness of speech could be gauged. The Qurʾān and the utterances of the Prophet which were - and still are - considered the models of linguistic purity were ultimately subjected to the same test. Evidence was elaborately sought in pre-Islamic poetry to prove the purity of many words and expressions in the Qurʾān and Ḥadīth, and if the search proved fruitless resort was made to forgery. The point to be made here is that scholars who were engaged in other disciplines came increasingly under the influence of the dominant trend. Even the mawāli some of whom were decidedly anti-Arabs could not break the grip of Jāhili or pseudo-Jāhili poetry on their minds. Perhaps the fact that the vast majority of those who were engaged in such fields of research were non-Arabs who were at pains to master the Arabic language in order to outdo the Arabs in their own tongue, explains why they took for granted

1. cf. Ibn-Saʿd, vii, part 2, 1-3; Bayān, i, 204-205.
2. Ibn-Sall., 51-52; Irshād, vi, 202-203.
in their social and cultural life the standard which their Arab contemporaries regarded as ultimate. The gradual decline of linguistic purity among urbanized Arabs which was heightened by the influx of non-Arabs is an important factor contributing to the general veneration accorded to ancient poetry as the repository of chaste Arabic.

The eagerness with which this poetry came to be sought and recorded and the relish with which certain philologists viewed it inevitably influenced the relations between the emerging class of scholars and their contemporary poets.¹ The fact that Başra was the earliest home of this general renaissance in literary and philological themes is significant in indicating that all the major Başri poets with whom we are concerned in this study composed their poetry at a time when the Başri scholars were emerging as an important force in society which poets, at least, could not easily ignore. In actual fact the ramification of this Umayyad renaissance extended beyond the mere establishment of the diverse branches of learning that bloomed in that period and affected in many respects the ways many poets conceived and composed their poetry. By the same token the contribution of poets to this intellectual activity was real and significant. To assess their role in this connection it is important to keep in mind the fact that such scholars as existed in Umayyad Başra were restricted by their specialization to the systematization of philological disciplines, and that the matter of collecting

¹. cf. Chapter I, pp. 65-66.
and studying poetry was not their monopoly since many other groups, including poets, were by far more active. The insatiable desire to collect and learn ancient poetry was, as we have repeatedly indicated, closely associated with the general pattern of social, political and religious development in Umayyad Society. The activity was in a sense a popular one, and distinct groups emerged in the form of ruwah (transmitters) who busied themselves with collecting what poetry they could find to satisfy the general demand. Many such ruwah were not interested so much in studying poetry as in entertaining assemblies and courts.¹ Poets were interested in poetry not only to provide them with historical and tribal material which went into the structure of their compositions, but they also viewed it as providing the fundamental background necessary to any poetic excellence. The practice of transmitting poetry in general was regarded as the hallmark of the accomplished poet. Ru’ba ibn-al-‘Ajjāj when asked what the distinguished poet (fahl) was answered that it was the poet who was also a rawiya.² His judgement is corroborated by the career of such a poet as al-Farazdaq whose activities in this connection throw significant light on the cultural background which went into the formation of poetic tradition in Baṣra. Al-Jāḥiẓ called him 'the people's rawiya, their poet and the custodian of their chronicles',³ and Ibn-Qutayba credited him with being the best transmitter of the poetry of

1. cf. Ibn-Sall., 50.
2. 'Umda, i, 197.
3. Bayan, i, 256.
Imrū-'l-Qays.¹ His transmission of Ḥuṭayʾa’s poetry was especially noted by chroniclers.² The poet himself indicated to us the mainsprings of his poetic culture when he boasted of the ancient bards whose poetry he claimed to have inherited:

Odes were bestowed upon me by the Nābighas (of Banū-Dhubyān and Jaʿd) when they passed away, and by Abū-Yazīd (i.e. Mūkhabbal), the ulcerated one (i.e. Imrū-ʾl-Qays) and Jarwāl (i.e. Ḥuṭayʾa), And the stallion, ‘Alqama who possessed kings’ robes and whose words are not falsely attributed to him; The member of Banū-Qays (i.e. Taʿafṣa ibn-al-ʿAbd) whom they had killed, and the early Muhallhil among poets, The two Aʾshās (of Qays and Bahila), Muraqqish, the member of Quṣṭaʾa (i.e. at-Ṭamaḥan) whose verses have passed into proverbs, And by ‘Abīd (ibn-al-ʿAbrag), the member of Banū-Asad when he passed away, And Abū-Duʿad whose poetry is often plagiarized, By the two descendants of Abū-Sulmā, Zuhayr and his son (Kaʿb), together with the son of Furayʾa (i.e. Ḥassan ibn-Thabit) when the tongue becomes serious, The Jaʿfari (i.e. Labīd ibn-Rābiʿa), and before him Bishr (ibn-Abī-Khazīm) whose poems I have in an exhaustive book, And I have inherited from the family of ‘Awṣ (ibn-Ḥajār) an expressive tongue sharp as poison stained on both sides of which with colocynth, And from the Ḥarīthi, the member of al-Ḥimas (i.e. an-Najashi) I have inherited an accuracy that splits ideas as the axe splits a soft stone, They (i.e. odes) split the outer part of stone from its heart, and yet they are heavier than the two mountains of ‘Aṣmāʾ, They (i.e. poets) bequeathed their book to me and I inherited them (i.e. odes) as solid rocks.[378]³

His intense awareness of the achievement of his Ḥaḥilī predecessors is demonstrated by the anecdote related by Abū-

1. Sh., i, 70; ʿIqd, viii, 109; Agh., xix, 27.
2. ʿUmda, i, 198.
3. Far., ii, 159-160; cf. ii, 142 for his defiance of eight other ancient poets to compose like him; cf. also Jar., 94.
'Ubayda according to which when a Tamīmī youth asked his opinion on some poetry of his, al-Farazdaq listened to what the youth had to declaim then said, "O my nephew, poetry used to be an enormous mature camel the head of which was acquired by Imrū'-l-Qays, the hump by 'Amr ibn-Kulthūm, the thigh by 'Abīd ibn-al-Abraş, the back by al-A'sha, the shoulder by Zuhayr, the breast by Ṭarafa, the two flanks by the two Nābighas, and when we approached there was nothing left but its legs and belly which we have distributed among us. The butcher then said, 'Nothing has remained but the contents of the stomach and blood which should be my reward for my services to you', and we granted him that. He then cooked that stuff, ate it and relieved his bowels. Your poetry is of this butcher's excrement". It might well be that the whole story was a mere fabrication but its significance - underlined by the poet's own lines quoted above - lies in the general belief that the poet was well versed in ancient poetry. Established poets as Dhū-'r-Rumma and 'Umar ibn-Abī-Rabī'a sought his opinion on their poetry. Yet al-Farazdaq was only one of many who shared in the same tradition, as he mentioned in one of his poems. The able criticism by al-Ba'ith of his contemporary fellow poets before Walīd I bears out this view. The fact that poets in general were versed in poetry

1. Muwash., 363.
6. 'Iqd, vi, 205-210.
made them best qualified to judge each other. Most of the hostilities between them, though largely intensified by tribal considerations¹ arose initially either from the criticism of one poet by another or — in the protracted duel between Jarīr and al-Farazdaq — from an expression of partisanship by a third party for one poet against another. But the social undertones which accompanied much of this critical activity rendered poets sensitive to any charges leveled at their compositions and their reaction was often fierce and devastating. The hectic atmosphere in which tribal feelings were closely welded to poetic expression made the distinction between the two elements a difficult task.² This, perhaps, explains why most of those who ventured opinions on poetry were poets who could retaliate in kind if satirized by the poet criticized. The majority of those who were in a position to pass judgment feared the consequences of their stand and were consequently reluctant to voice their opinions as we have noted in the case of al-Muhallab.³ The early literary scholars were furthermore at a greater disadvantage since most of them were mawāli and were thus more exposed to invective as we have seen in the case of 'Anbasa al-Fīl and

1. cf. Chapter II, p. 106.
2. Ibid. An example of this is provided by the report that ar-Rā'ī and Akhtal met at the court of Bishr ibn-Marwan, governor of Iraq who asked: Which of you is the better poet? Ar-Rā'ī snapped, "As for poetry the emir is more knowledgeable about it, but by God no Taghlibī woman has born the like of you". [Ibn-Sall., 442-3]. Bishr's mother like ar-Rā'ī belonged to Qays.
'Abdallah ibn-al-Hadrami with al-Farazdaq. 1 Although 'Anbasa seemed to have appreciated the literary value of Jarir's poetry, and 'Abdallah criticized what he considered to be grammatical faults in the poetry of al-Farazdaq, 2 the latter brushed aside their genuine motives, and in line with the general spirit, attacked their base origin as we have seen earlier. The same al-Farazdaq censured Abu-'Amr ibn-al-'Ala for a reason unspecified in the available sources. He attempted to rectify this by praising the learned man in his line:—

I have not ceased to open doors and close them [behind me] until I approached Abu-'Amr son of 'Ammar. [379] 3

But Abu-'Amr rebuffed him by telling him:—

You have censured Zibban (i.e. Abu-'Amr) then came apologizing for that, [it is as if] you had neither censured nor cursed. [380] 4

It seems that the narrow specialization of those early scholars and their marginal interest in poetry as a means of supporting their grammatical systems restricted their criticism to elements in poetry which poets naturally considered peripheral. Most of the critical remarks made by Ibn-al-Hadrami were grammatical in nature, and the one literary remark attributed to him — that Kuthaiyir was the best of Islamic poets — was contested by almost all other critics. 5 But the rapidly developing cultural milieu was creating facilities for scholars who took a lively interest

3. Bayan, 1, 256.
4. Nuzha, 15
5. Ibn-Sall., 44; Muzhir, 11, 299.
in poetry as such. It was stated that Abū-Nawfal ibn-Abī-
‘Aqrāb was the teacher of Abū-‘Amr and Shu‘ba ibn-al-Ḥajjāj
(85-160/705-779). Abū-‘Amr used to ask him about poetry and
language while Shu‘ba enquired about Traditions, and neither
of them recorded what was said to the other. This Abū-‘Amr
became the most distinguished authority on poetry and its
criticism. With the passage of time antagonism gave way to
mutual appreciation. Although in the final analysis the
balance was heavily weighted in favour of scholars who greatly
influenced the course of poetry as we shall see presently, the
general atmosphere was such that both poets and scholars
leaned on each other and were equally moulded by the same
dominant modes of cultural standards. The arrogant attitude
of al-Farazdaq who lampooned Ibn-al-Ḥāqrāmī and defiantly told
him and his fellow grammarians, "I have only to compose [poetry]
and the onus of providing arguments falls on you," did not
dissuade him from asking the expert advice of Ibn-al-Ḥāqrāmī
when a defect in his poetic composition had been pointed out
to him by some critics. Scholars, too, recognized the
immense wealth the production of contemporary poets contained
which satisfied their philological interests. Yūnus ibn-Ḥābīb
(90-182/710-800) used to say: "Had it not been for the poetry
of al-Farazdaq a third of the Arab language would have been

1. cf. Ibn-Sa‘d, vii, part 2, 38; Bayān, ii, 86.
3. Ibn-Qut., Sh., i, 35.
and perhaps that was one of the main reasons that endeared this poet's production to scholars in contrast with that of Jarīr. In fact there are many indications to show that the relative 'difficulty' of diction encountered in the poetry of al-Farazdaq in contrast with that of Jarīr's, though at bottom the natural result of emotional and intellectual aptitudes, was accentuated by considerations arising from his contacts with scholars and grammarians. Ibn-Sallām said, "He used to riddle his expressions with confusing structures which appealed to grammarians." Ibn-al-Athīr, noting the poet's fondness of such practice, remarked, "It is as though he did that intentionally, because such things do not come about without deliberation and intention." The effort undertaken by al-Farazdaq in this direction was expressed in the well known critical dictum that "al-Farazdaq hews [his poetry] from rocks whereas Jarīr takes his from the sea." His many critical pronouncements and his immense knowledge as a transmitter of language and poetry brought him nearer to the company of contemporary scholars than any other poet with the exception of Ru'bā. It is not by chance that these two

1. Irshād, vii, 259; cf. Bayān, i, 256.
3. Ibn-Sall., 308; cf. 309-312 for examples; Agh., xix, 15-16.
5. Ibn-Sall., 387.
6. cf. Ibn-Sall., 44, Muzhir, ii, 299 on Imrū'u-’l-Qays;
poets were praised by Abū-'Amr when he said, "I have never seen any Bedouin who settled in an urban centre whose tongue was not corrupted except Ru‘ba and al-Farazdaq." In fact the achievements of poets on the cultural level forced scholars to change their inflexible attitudes to contemporary poetry in many respects. The unsparing approach of Abū-'Amr to language which impelled him to base all his testimonies on pre-Islamic poetry was relaxed when he confronted the excellence of 'Umar ibn-Abī-Rabi‘a whom he regarded as an authority in language (ḥujja). The excellence of the contemporary poets of his native town forced him to say, "This modern (muḥdath) poetry has become so accomplished that I almost wanted to transmit it." In practice, however, he was not hostile to what was composed in his own day despite his dogmatic approach which held pre-Islamic poetry to be pre-eminent. His excessive preference for the poetry of al-Akhtal about whom he said, "Had al-Akhtal lived only one day in the Jahiliyya I would not have preferred anyone to him," and his fondness of Bashshār’s poetry indicated that he was not wholly given to appreciating the old to the exclusion of the modern. He even paired the poets of his day with what he considered their Jahili counterparts. He used to liken Jarīr to al-A‘shā,

1. Khiz., i, 204.
3. Muwash., 201, 202; Fuhula, 499.
4. Ibn-Qut., Sh., i, 7; Muzhir, ii, 304.
6. Ibid., iii, 26.
Farazdaq to Zuhayr and Akhṭal to an-Nabigha. 1 His famous verdict that "poetry was concluded by Dhū-'r-Rumma and the rajaz by Ru'ba", 2 underlines further his appreciation of what his contemporaries were doing in the field of poetry. His shrewd observation about the ephemeral nature of Dhū-'r-Rumma's poetry 3 did not detract from his high opinion of him even in the court of such an imposing emir as Bilāl ibn-Abī-Burda (d.120/738) who was versed in poetry and language and much given to arguing. 4 At the end of a heated controversy between the emir and the poet about the correct reading of an ancient verse he steered a middle course by declaring both readings correct. On being asked by Bilāl whether he honestly drew on Dhū-'r-Rumma as a genuine source of usage, Abū-'Amr said, "His language is chaste (fasih), but we draw on him sparingly." When they went out Dhū-'r-Rumma told Abū-'Amr, "Had I not known that you sided with him [only to avert his wrath] I would have lampooned you in such a manner that no two persons would dare to keep your company after it." 5 On another occasion when Abū-'Amr pointed out to him the correct way of rebutting a critical remark by Bilāl on one of the poet's qaṣīdas, the latter said, "O Abū-'Amr, you are unique in your learning, but in my learning and poetry I have many counterparts (ashbāh)." 6 Such congenial relations between

1. Ibid., vii, 38; cf. also i, 94, 120; Sh., i, 448; Ibn-Sall., 55.
3. Agh., xvi, 115; Ibn-Sall., 467; Muwash., 171.
poets and scholars were the outcome of similar circumstances in which both groups found themselves. Their frequent meetings with each other in the courts of caliphs and emirs, and their reliance on more or less the same source for livelihood not infrequently gave them some sense of belonging together. 'Īsā ibn-'Umar¹ related that when once Dhū-'r-Rumma visited him he offered to give the poet a portion of what he had earned but the latter rejected the offer saying, "You and I take and do not give out."² The relations between them seemed to have developed so much that 'Īsā committed the poetry of Dhū-'r-Rumma to writing.³ The way Jarīr enjoyed the recital of 'Abū-'Amr of the poetry of al-Majnūn when he alighted at the scholar's house on his way from Damascus⁴ indicates his admiration for Abū-'Amr.

This close relationship between poets and scholars not only brought them nearer to each other on the personal level, but was also of great consequence on the development of Basīrī poetry. The interest taken by scholars in the words and expressions of pure Arabs and their conviction that the real source of such material was the desert affected the career of poets in many respects. The growing prestige and importance of those systematic scholars sharpened the poets' awareness of the demands of philologists and grammarians. The desert

1. cf. Chapter I, p. 64 above; Chapter II, p. 102.
2. 'Idā, ii, 347; Irshād, vi, 102.
4. 'Idā, vi, 217.
became the El Dorado of scholars. The fright experienced by Dhū-ʿr-Rumma when he realized that people had discovered his literacy - a mark of urbanization - and the flimsy pretexts he adduced in an attempt to dispel the charge 1 all point to his concern lest his credentials as a genuine Bedouin be suspected by scholars, some of whom deprecated his very stay in Baṣra and his eating vegetables and salted food. 2 Poets who settled in urban quarters were deemed inferior and ran the risk of having their poetry rejected as a testimony of standard usage as happened with al-Kumayt and at-Ṭirimmah 3 who were accused by Ruʿba of having asked him about rare words which he subsequently found in their compositions. 4 Abū-ʿAmr saw in the long residence of Jarīr and al-Farazdaq in the urban settlement a considerable drawback. 5 This tendency among the scholars to welcome Bedouins as genuine transmitters of language was instrumental in drawing a number of Bedouin transmitters into the misr, providing the source upon which the scholars of Baṣra drew. 6 It is estimated that the books in which Abū-ʿAmr had recorded material on the authority of such Bedouins filled a house of his up to the ceiling. 7

1. ‘Askari, Diwan al-Maʿānī, ii, 120; Muwash-, 177-178; Muzhir, ii, 220; cf. Chapter II, p.102 above; cf. Khiz., i, 102 for a similar case involving Abū-ʿn-Najm.
3. Muwash-, 208; Khafajī, op.cit., 335; Agh., ii, 18.
5. Agh., ii, 18; Muwash-, 208; Khafajī, 335.
6. The most important among them were Abū-ʿz-Zaʿraʾ (cf. Agh., xi, 104), Abū-Khira (Nuzha, 16; Fihrist, 45), Abu-Firas, Abū-Sarira, al-Aghtash (cf. Muzhir, i, 109), Abū-Damdam (cf. Sh., i, 5; 'Iṣd, vi, 158). cf. also Pellat, Milieu, pp.137-138.
7. cf. Chapter I, p. 68 above.
Perhaps it was this concern for Bedouin life that motivated the seemingly affected behaviour of a poet as Ru'ba who was by no means a permanent desert dweller, since he stayed for a long time in the migr and frequented princely courts. Nonetheless he continued to eat rats publicly in the town and when he was blamed for it he said, "By God it is cleaner than your domesticated animals and poultry which eat dirt; it eats only pure wheat and the choicest part of food." The way he dressed seemed to have been designed to excite wonder and attract attention. It is reported that he once approached the market place wearing a green woollen garment (barnakan) and when children saw him they chased him, piercing his garment with palm thorns and jeering at his rags until he appealed for police protection against their foul play, an anecdote indicating that his appearance was something quite amusing even for Baṣrīs whose market of Mirbad was frequented by Bedouins the different dresses of whom should have been a familiar sight even for naughty children. This Ru'ba who survived the Umayyad dynasty (d.154/772) became one of the most distinguished authorities in the transmission of language. "Celebrated philologists drew on him, took him as an example, considered his poetry evidence of unimpeachable authority, and made him a master to be followed (imām)." In point of fact he had a kind of salon which he used to hold every Friday in

2. Ibid., 89.
3. Ibid., 84.
the quarter of Banū-Tamīm in Basra. It was attended by scholars who used to ask him about language, and the famous scholar Yūnus ibn-Ḥabīb frequently boasted of being the disciple (ṣuhūlām) of Ru’ba.\(^1\) In fact the immense knowledge of Ru’ba in language and grammar which endeared him to Baṣrī scholars is unmistakable in his compositions. When his disciples, who included most Basrī philologists late in the Umayyad era, assembled one Friday and blocked the road, an old woman tried to pass through them but failed, thereupon Ru’ba said:—

> Give way to the elderly woman when she comes on her way back from the market.
> Leave her alone, since grammarians are not reckoned among her friends.[381]\(^2\)

The authority of Ru’ba and his father al-‘Ajjāj in language was such that they used, according to Ibn-Jinnī, to coin certain words they had never heard before.\(^3\) Their standing among philologists was unparalleled. Yūnus regarded them as the best poets he knew of,\(^4\) and when Ru’ba died, al-Khalīl ibn-Abīmad remarked, "Today we have buried poetry, language and chasteness of speech (fasāḥa)."\(^5\)

The fact that poets such as al-Kumayt and at-Ṭirimmāḥ used to ask Ru’ba about rare words and include them in their poetry as we have noted, and the bitter charge levelled by him at Dhū-‘r-Rumma whom he accused of plagiarizing his

---

1. Agh., xxi, 85; Muzhir, i, 218.
2. Agh., xxi, 89.
3. Muzhir, i, 71.
4. Agh., xxi, 89; Muzhir, ii, 301.
5. Agh., xxi, 91.
poetry all indicate the close relationship between the kind of poetry composed by these poets and the activities of scholars and philologists. This point was underlined by 'Uqba, son of Ru'ba when he challenged Bashshār saying, "My father and I have opened up for people the gates of poetry of unfamiliar diction (gharīb) and rajaz." In view of this relationship it is not an overstatement to say that the resurgence of rajaz poetry in the form that it took in the compositions of al-'Ajjāj and Ru'ba was greatly influenced by the requirements of philologists and grammarians. Ru'ba realized this fact and his eyes were constantly focused, even in his panegyrics, on grammarians and scholars. Praising Naṣr ibn-Sayyār he said:

When transmitters deliver what I offer, do not bother about my being away,
For in my choice and exertion - when I pick out the best of well-balanced poems,
In which the grammarian seeks to detect my intention - I glorify Naṣr who is worthy of glory.[382]

He indicated the diligence and scholarship employed in composing his poetry, in a panegyric on al-Qāsim ibn-Muḥammad of Thaqīf:

I am neither of short-lived reputation nor lost in obscurity, I compose [my poetry] as a skilful weaver of decorative cloth [handles his material]
You should see me leaning on the writing-book [bent] on fashioning measured [verses] that diffuse [everywhere],

1. Ibn-Qut., Sh., ii, 516.
2. Agh., iii, 37.
No grammarian can ever apply his insight therein as I do, even if he twists both sides of his face with frustration, Prudent master of knowledge and expression though he may be, so that they (i.e., verses) emerge accomplished in a smooth manner.[383]

The major justification for harassing his audience with antiquated and difficult words some of which seemed to have puzzled even some scholars, was the lexical demand, judging by the frequency with which his verses and those of his father are quoted in philological and lexicographical sources. The intensity of the demand for this material is indicated by Ru’ba’s exasperation at the insistence of Yunus on bombarding him with questions and queries, inciting him to exclaim, "How long will you continue to ask me about these trifles (or falsehoods) (bawāṭīl) forcing me to embellish them for you?" How far Ru’ba and his father were reflecting a distinct Tamīmī dialect is an open question, since philologists, with very rare exceptions where a Tamīmī usage is indicated, quote their poetry as evidence of Arabic as a whole. It might also be observed that although there is no denying that most of the words and usages contained in their rajaz reflecting the austere conditions of desert life, formed a genuine part of the transmitted Arab heritage, the extent of this kind of usage

1. Ibid., 61; cf. Agh., xxi, 89 for the meticulous care Ru’ba took to satisfy grammarians in his compositions.
5. cf. Ibn-Sall., 65; Nuwash., 217.
seems very limited indeed. Bedouins in general were not particularly given to the tongue-twisters with which much of this rajaz poetry teemed. Even in the case of a poetry of a lighter vein such as that of Jarīr and al-Farazdaq they appreciated that of Jarīr which was relatively simpler in diction than that of al-Farazdaq's.¹ This is not to question that the bādiya was the source of much of this heritage. What is questioned is the accessibility of this knowledge to all and sundry even in the desert. The point to be made here is that such poets did much research and learnt their craft in the same way as the systematic scholars had done. The wonder which the eloquence and rhetorical acumen of Abū-Muslim of Khurāsān excited in Ru'ba when he met him shortly after the downfall of the Umayyad dynasty is an index of this. Ru'ba remarked, "By God I have never seen a non-Arab who is more eloquent than he, and I have never thought that anyone other than my father and myself knew such expressions."² It is obvious that al-‘Ajjāj, Ru'ba and most of the Bedouin transmitters were not ordinary Bedouins who could be taken at random to represent the average desert-dwellers. They were rather the product of the cultural activity in Baṣra and its impact on the desert. Such transmitters as later became the authorities in language and poetry knew what the philologists wanted and exerted themselves to master their craft and equip

1. Ibn-Sall., 316; Muwash., 115.
themselves with the kind of learning for which they became famous at a later date. Most of the poets who dwelt on depicting desert life had some kind of a link with that life at least for some time in their lives. Many of them learnt their craft not in the miṣr as such but in the desert which was activated by what was happening in the miṣr. The prospects of a better life to which they looked forward in urban settlements led to a comparable cultural activity in the bādiya itself based on the study of poetry and language. When Abū-NUkhaylā quarrelled with his father as a young boy he left Basra and settled in the desert where he cultivated himself (ta'ddaba) and learnt to compose poetry in both forms of qaṣīd and rajaz, and soon his reputation grew.1 He even became the teacher of Walīd II, the famous Umayyad caliph poet.2 The same was true of Dhū-'r-Rumma who was himself originally a teacher in the bādiya,3 and whose reputation was carried to ‘Abd-al-Malik ibn-Marwān through the testimony of Jarīr and al-Farazdaq.4

The ardent desire of these Bedouins to impress their urban audiences encouraged the tendency to rob others of their creations. Judging by the widespread practice of plagiarism in which most poets were involved5 it seems likely that much of the poetry composed by desert poets who remained

1. Agh., xviii, 139-140.
2. Ibn-Mu'tazz, Tabaqat, 63.
3. Muwash., 170; Tbn-Sall., 467.
4. Muwash., 239.
within the confines of the desert was carried over by those poets who moved to the migr and attributed it to themselves. The practice of Abū-Nukhayla in this connection even with the poetry of his contemporary Ru'ba who lived with him in the same town is notorious. Ru’ba became so exasperated by his frequent and unashamed practice that he had to compromise with him and to plead with him to leave his poetry alone as long as he remained in Iraq but to plagiarize whatever he liked of it if he went to Syria. The number of unknown poets whose poetry disappeared or was taken over by other poets could be underlined by the report of Ibn-Qutayba who mentioned the names of three poets of Banū-Sa‘d of Tamīm who failed to visit the anṣār and so their rajaz disappeared. The best poem of Ru’ba is said to have been composed by one of them.

Thus the desert which produced the transmitters upon whom the philologists relied was also the mainspring of poetry depicting desert life which was also in vogue in the same urban quarters as we shall see in the following chapter. In fact the desert continued for a long time to be the fertile source of raw material upon which the migr drew in this respect. Bedouin poets who backed their art with a deep knowledge of language under the impact of the cultural activity in Baṣra

1. Agh., xviii, 140, 145; Muwash., 219, 220.
3. Sh., i, 5.
5. Sh., i, 5.
such as Dhū-‘r-Rumma and Ru’ba featured prominently in the works of grammarians and lexicographers.¹

The impact of cultural activities was, furthermore, positive on poetry in so far as it moulded the mentality of poets through their constant contact with the diverse exponents of ideas, philosophical, religious, political and the like with which Baṣra in general and al-Mirbad in particular teemed. In actual fact poets - especially those among them who attained in posterity the status of major poets, such as al-Farazdaq, Jarīr, Dhū-‘r-Rumma, Ru’ba and later, Bashshār - were highly cultured individuals who kept abreast of the cultural movements of their day and some of them contributed to them. Thus al-Farazdaq used to frequent and participate in the circle of al-Ḥasan al- Başrī, while Jarīr used to attend that of Ibn-Sīrīn.² The general spirit of these circles was a combative one deriving its vigour from debating and arguing. The heated encounters between exponents of divergent views such as the qadariyya (upholders of free-will) and the jabriyya (upholders of predestination) and the hectic atmosphere of controversy embracing the various politico-religious sects such as Shi‘a, Khawārij and the like were all contributory in some measure to the cultivation of that brand of poetry based on argument and

¹. For a further evidence of the close relationship between these poets and ‘Ulema cf. the poem of Dhū-‘r-Rumma entitled "uhjiyyat al-‘Arab", a kind of didactic poetry in riddle form where he described over twenty objects of desert life. (Rumma, 169-183). cf. E.I², s.v. "Dhū-‘l-Rumma" by Blachère.

counter-argument. This prevailing spirit of disputation even among the members of the same group was bitterly expressed by an Azraqī poet, Zayd ibn-Jundab, when his party was undermined by the incessant attacks of al-Muhallab:—

Tell those who make free with their obligations: You should be consoled by the dissension among the [Azraqī] group, the rancour [they felt for each other] and their flight,
We used to be a group that followed a single faith but were eventually divided by heated debates and confusion between seriousness and playing,
How unnecessary was it for some men, may their endeavours be lost, to indulge in arguing and oratory. [384]

The same pattern was profitably utilized by poets and it reached its peak in the interchanges (naqaʾiḥ) between Jarīr and al-Farazdaq and the scores of poets who joined them. The result was that what was produced in the realm of poetry was closely allied - in technique if not always in spirit - to the kinds of debates and disputes that had frequently taken place in al-Mirbad between scholars and thinkers. This tendency was reflected not only in the field of tribal poetry or in controversy between individuals such as that between Ḥarītha ibn-Badr and Anas ibn-Zunaym, but was also visible - though to a lesser extent - in the field of ideas. When al-Farazdaq composed the verse:-

I am Death which eventually takes your soul away, so figure out a way of tackling it. [385],

he swore that Jarīr would never be able to compose a better line. When Jarīr heard the challenge he strained his faculties until he said:-

I am Time that lasts when Death perishes, so bring me any comparable thing that vies with Time.\[386]\(^1\)

The intellectual impact on poetry is discernible on different levels. The influence that the company of al-\(\text{\=H}\)asan and the other q\(\text{\=u}\)s\(\text{\=a}\)\(\text{\=s}\) and theologians had on the poetry of al-Farazdaq and the rajaz of al-\*'Aj\(\text{\=a}\)j\(\text{\=a}\)j has been alluded to earlier.\(^2\)

Their effect however goes beyond the didactic and exhortatory undertones already mentioned. Many ideas debated in these assemblies found their way into poetry. When the question of the obligatory nature of swearing by God in a light spirit was raised in the circle of al-\(\text{\=H}\)asan, al-Farazdaq told the audience that he had resolved the whole question and put it in a nutshell in his line:–

\begin{quote}
You are not taken to task by any nonsense you utter unless you intend binding resolutions.\[387]\(^3\)
\end{quote}

The atmosphere of Ba\(\text{\=s}\)ra which reflected a moderate political and social structure left its imprint on the general spirit of poetry. It has been stated that despite the insurrection and internal feuds Ba\(\text{\=s}\)ra followed a moderate course in politics and accepted in general the de facto presence of Umayyads as the guardians of the Islamic community (\(j\)ama\(\text{\=a}\)\(\text{\=e}\)).\(^4\) This position was not merely one of political expediency. It sprang from a strong religious and

---

1. Agh., xix, 32; 'Umda, i, 209.
2. Chapter V, pp. 266-269.
3. Far., ii, 307; Ibn-Sall., 283-284; the idea of oath was also employed by Jar\(\text{\=i}\)r, Diwan, 454; Nac., 754, and Dh\(\text{\=u}\)-r-Rumma, Diwan, 294.
4. cf. Chapter 1, p. 60.
philosophical standpoint that the consensus of enlightened opinion in Baṣra generally came to uphold. The idea of qadar, fate, and the necessity of submitting to what God decreed all tended to reinforce the state authority which was equated with that of the jamāʿa. But it is important to note that many even of those who upheld the opposite view - free will - the qadariyya, were not always hostile to the Umayyads. Thus al-Ḥasan al-Baṣrī refused to join insurrection against the Umayyads and even actively opposed the rebels,¹ a stand which brought against him the wrath of the Khawārij.² But as a matter of policy the Umayyads saw a danger in the doctrine and persecuted those who held it.³ Poetry in general, especially when addressed to Umayyads, reflected this moderate position. Poets who were known for their Shi‘ī leanings such as Abū‘l-Aswād and al-Farazdaq rarely revealed their sentiments in the poetry extant. The fact that the antithesis of qadar-jabr was more of an intellectual approach than merely a vulgar dressing for political alignment is borne out by the discussion between Dhū‘r-Rumma, who was well known for his qadarite tendencies, and Ru‘ba who represented the general trend in Baṣra,⁴ about the will of God to do harm.⁵ The point was made clearer when Dhū‘r-Rumma recited his line:

Two eyes which God commanded to be and they were, acting on hearts as wine acts on wits.[388]⁶ ...

1. Ibid.
2. Ibn-Sa‘d, vii, part 1, 127.
3. cf. Ibid., 122 where al-Ḥasan was intimidated by the Sultan.
4. cf. Ru‘ba, 6 for an invective against the qadariyya.
5. Murtada, Amālī, i, 14.
6. Rumma, 213.
When somebody suggested to him that it would have been more appropriate if he changed 'faʿulan' into 'faʿulayn' thus attributing the action of the eyes to God's command rather than to the eyes themselves as the upholder of the doctrine of free will would have it, the poet reacted sharply and snubbed the man.¹ The moderate view which stressed the idea of jamāʿa was intellectually as well as politically dominant.² The lines of as-Salatan al-ʿAbdi indicated the revulsion of Basra to extremist sects which refused to accept the general position of Baṣris:—

I behold a people that have unsheathed their sword and to their whips was added the ʿAsbaḥī brand,³ [Splintering] into Najdites, Ḥarurites and Azraqites calling upon [others] to follow an Azraqi [sect], Our creed is that we are [just] Muslims following the faith of our ʿ Siddiq and Prophet.[389]⁴

---

1. Agh., xvi, 122.
2. cf. Ibn-Sall., 439 for ar-Rāʿī; Far., i, 12; ii, 89, 311.
3. The second hemistich may also be rendered as: who had their ʿAsbaḥī whip lengthened.
4. Mub., Kamīl, ii, 246; cf. Nuzha, 8 for the lines of Naṣr ibn-ʿĀṣim when he rejected the various Khārijī and other sects.
CHAPTER VII
SOCIAL CHANGE AND THE STRUCTURE OF POETRY

Social forces which determine the structure of society also dictate its patterns of thought. Poetry, being one of the most potent intellectual vehicles of expressing the tempo and dimension of social change is necessarily influenced in form and content by what takes place in society as a whole. The form-content relationship in poetry is essentially an organic one and the futility of treating one element of it in isolation of the other is an obvious fact recognized by modern criticism. This contention is nowhere more true than in the question of style which is often treated separately as a purely literary activity unrelated to its social background. I propose, without indulging in purely literary matters which are not my concern here, to show that the structure of Baṣrī poetry is largely - though in a lesser degree than its content - the by-product of social forces which create certain conditions in society which demand a special way of expression.

The variety of modes and styles in Baṣrī poetry was not always the outcome of inherited tradition. Factors instrumental in the diversification of cultural activities and resulting in specialized branches of knowledge were also at work in the field of poetry. Conditions obliged poets to specialize not only in the subject-matter of their poetry but also in the form of poetry composed. Thus the resurgence of rajaz poetry was the outcome of certain cultural and social factors and not all poets were fully integrated into this cultural trend that
they could master this form. In fact many of them encountered difficulties in composing in this metre which seemed to have been the speciality of a certain branch of Tamīm, Banū-Sa’d. Dhū-’r-Rumma was reported to have said, "I composed in rajaz, but when I recognized that I could not compete with the two men (i.e. ‘Ajjāj and Ru’ba) I abandoned it and proceeded with the qaṣīd.”¹ The main reason for this change was his fear that his inferior compositions in rajaz might damage his reputation and detract from him as an established poet.² The same difficulty seemed to have been experienced by Jarīr who confessed that he used rajaz sparingly for fear that it might be intractable for him if he indulged in it.³ The heated competition between poets to master their medium and hence to enhance their chances of gaining greater favours seems to underlie this situation. Al-Farazdaq, appreciating the excellence of the Khārijī ‘Imrān ibn-Ḥittān in poetry, said, "The son of Ḥittān has done us a good service when he did not pursue the line we took. Had he done that he would have defeated us.”⁴ This realization was not limited to the small circle of poets; their audience was also fully aware of it. When Abū-Nukhayla, early in his career, composed a qaṣīda in praise of Maslama ibn-‘Abd-al-Malik, the latter failed to appreciate it and remarked, "O Banū-Sa’d, what have

2. Ibid.
3. Agh., vii, 55; cf. Bayān, i, 180; iii, 272 for lists of poets who excelled in rajaz and qaṣīd.
you to do with the qaṣīd? Your real field is the rajaz.\textsuperscript{1}

The rise of rajaz to respectability and its fusion with the mainstream of Arabic poetry were closely linked with developments in the two main urban centres in Iraq, Kūfa and Baṣra. Earlier it was considered inferior to the qaṣīd. Abū-'Ubayda declared that poets used to look down upon the rujjāz until Abū-n-Najm, 'Ajjaq and Ru'ba composed long urjūzās and only then had the rujjāz risen to parity with other poets.\textsuperscript{2} The fact that this metre was originally a popular medium that satisfied the need for extemporization\textsuperscript{3} explains the revulsion of poets to it until the major Umayyad rujjāz developed it into a respectable and recognized form that competed with the qaṣīd form of poetry. The stigma that attached to rajaz was expressed by al-La'īn of Minqar when he censured Ru'ba in his line in the basīt metre:

Would you, offspring of baseness, threaten me with rajaz verses when in them lies the source of baseness and disappointment?[390]\textsuperscript{4}

The limitations of rajaz in treating the traditional subjects, especially satire, were obvious. When Jarīr intimated to Hishām al-Wara'tī that Dhu-'r-Rumma had overshadowed him in the feud that was raging between them, the former replied desperately, "What can I do? I am a rajiz and he composes qaṣīdas, and the rajaz does not stand up to the qaṣīd in

1. Ibid., xviii, 140.
2. Agh., ix, 78.
satire, so will you help me?"\(^1\) Perhaps that was the reason why Ru’ba and ‘Ajjaj did not excel in satire\(^2\) and had to put forward feeble arguments to defend their position in this connection.\(^3\) Al-‘Ajjaj, in fact, avoided encounters with qaṣīd poets especially Jarīr who was notorious for his satire.\(^4\) Jarīr once threatened him, "By God, if I exert myself one night only [composing a satire against you] those pieces (muqattā‘at) of yours will be of no avail to you."\(^5\) When they were forced to engage in satire they usually engaged with other rajāz poets as in the case of al-‘Ajjaj with Abū-‘n-Najm,\(^6\) and Ru’ba with Abū-Nukhayla.\(^7\)

It is plausible to suggest that the cultivation of rajāz and its development in the Umayyad period had much in common as suggested earlier with the cultural developments that were taking place at the same time in Baṣra. Its development was partly a response to the philological need. But more important is the fact that the rajāz poets, finding themselves unable to compete with poets who employed the traditional qaṣīd form, developed their art to express themes and ideas that appealed to town dwellers as well as to scholars. Their elaborate portrayal of landscapes and desert animals indicated the joy

---

1. Ibn-Sall., 473; cf. E.I\(^1\), s.v. "Dhū-‘l-Rumma" by Schaade.
3. Ibn-Qut., Sh., i, 41, 573; ‘Umda, i, 112.
5. Agh., xxi, 88.
6. Hayawan, vi, 70; Sh., ii, 582; Nallino, 153.
derived by urban dwellers in recounting a kind of life to which they were emotionally and culturally attached but which they no longer experienced. These were aware that the essence of their culture lay in the desert and the rajaz poets in common with other Bedouin poets who excelled in descriptions of desert life as Dhū-ʾr-Rumma, supplied this need. Soon the rajaz came to be identified with Arab lore and heritage. Al-Muntaji', one of those Bedouin transmitters asked a Baṣrī dignitary about the kind of education he offered his sons. When he told him that it was religious studies (farāʾiḏ), he said, "That is the learning of mawāli, may you lose your father; teach them the rajaz because it expands the sides of their mouths, i.e. it makes them fluent in Arabic." The zeal with which poets attempted to meet this demand led at times to excesses and anachronisms. When al-ʿAjjāj or Ruʿba charged al-Kumayt and at-Ṭirimmān with misapplying in their poetry the gharīb which he had taught them, he correctly pointed out the reason when he said, "They did that because they were urban dwellers, describing what they had not seen, thus putting it in its wrong place, whereas I am a Bedouin who describes what he sees and thus puts it in its right place." Dhū-ʾr-Rumma who was a teacher in the desert but frequented Baṣra and was considered an authority (ḥujja) was embarrassed in al-ʿMirbad

6. Ibid., 192; ʿUḥūlā, 503.
by a tailor who pointed out to him his mistakes in his
descriptions of Bedouin life and the report adds that the poet
never recited any poem in al-Mirbad after that until the tailor
died.\footnote{Agh., xvi, 118-119.} The career of Dhū-'r-Rumma in this connection
underlines the appeal that the kind of desert poetry he composed
had in the courts of emirs and circles of scholars. Despite
the fact that Ru‘ba often accused him of plagiarizing his
poetry\footnote{Ibid., xvi, 121.} and charged him openly in the presence of his patron
Bilāl ibn-Abī-Burda,\footnote{Ibid., 123.} and despite the general opinion among
his contemporaries that he was a poor panegyrist,\footnote{Ibid., 121; Muwash., 172, 176; ‘Umda, i, 206.} his craft
was appreciated by the patrons to whom he addressed his poems.\footnote{cf. Agh., xvi, 123 for the opinion of Bilāl.}
His concern over his art overshadows the main subject of
praise. Whole poems ostensibly composed as panegyrics are
devoted to descriptions of journey and desert.\footnote{e.g. Rumma, 132-138 where the whole poem with the exception
of a single line in which the name of the patron is
mentioned, is devoted to desert life; cf. 184-192 on
‘Umar ibn-Hubayra; 355-371 on Ibn-Bishr of 69 verses only 4
in his praise; 547-600 on ‘Ubaydallāh ibn-Ma‘mar, out of
59 only 4 in his praise.} Yet although
his excellence in this brand of poetry excited the envy of such
accomplished poets as Jarīr and al-Farazdaq,\footnote{Agh., xvi, 112; Khiz., i, 106.} his general
achievement was not highly rated since he limited himself to
a relatively minor theme that appealed to a limited number of
people. The poet himself noticed the modest position assigned
to him by his contemporaries and seized the opportunity of al-
Farazdaq listening to one of his poems and when the latter
expressed his appreciation of it he asked the great poet,
"Why then am I not counted among the accomplished poets
(fuhūl)?" Al-Farazdaq simply said, "The description of
deserts and of droppings of camels bar you from that."\(^1\)
This narrowness of scope, however, was not confined to Dhu-
Rumma who was said to be a quarter of a poet.\(^2\) Ibn-Faswa was
considered the best describer of riding camels, and he never
failed to mention them in any poem he composed.\(^3\) This
absorbing activity earned him the line by an enemy of his:-

Ibn-Faswa has perished save his description of camels.

'Umar ibn-Laja' was deemed the best describer of milch-camels
in rajaz,\(^5\) a speciality of which Jarīr made fun when he
satirized him saying:-

Have you praised the camel, the daughters of which are
noble? Yet your father's daughters are not noble.

Ar-Rā‘ī received his nickname as a result of his indulgence in
describing milch-camels.\(^7\) Jarīr, noting his satires against
his own tribe Hawāzin and his indulgence in describing camels,
told him:-

\(^1\) Ibn-Sall., 468; Muwash., 172; Khiz., i, 107.
\(^2\) Muwash., 172; cf. E.I\(^1\), "Dhū-'r-Rumma" by Schaa.de.
\(^3\) Agh., xix, 143.
\(^4\) Ibid.
\(^5\) Fuhūla, 501.
\(^6\) Jar., 427.
\(^7\) Fuhūla, 501; Agh., xx, 168; Ibn-Sall., 250.
Your endeavour to credit Hawāzīn is most evil; you disgrace them and praise the milk-skin.[393]\(^1\)

The limitation of ar-Ra‘ī’s field, which seemed to have been self-imposed, was mainly due to his concern about originality and his reluctance to imitate other poets.\(^2\) This position, more than the satire of Jarīr against him,\(^3\) seemed to have been the real cause of the reduction in status which he suffered\(^4\) after the emergence of poets such as Jarīr and al-Farazdaq whose scope was wider and who appealed to wider audiences. The discriminating taste and keen interest which patrons and others interested in poetry displayed on many occasions indicate that poets were motivated, in choosing their fields of speciality, by the desire to excel and to satisfy an increasingly demanding audience whose knowledge of poetry was progressively maturing. When Ru’ba described the legs of a horse:-

They hurl down separately and fall standing,[394]

the emir Salm ibn-Qutayba quickly remarked, "You have erred, O Abū-‘l-Jahḥaf, you have described it as if shackled," and all that Ru’ba had to say was, "O emir, bring me nearer to the tail of a camel and I will describe it for you as it should be."\(^5\) In actual fact al-‘Ajjāj and Ru’ba specialized not in

---

1. Agh., xx, 171.
2. Ibid.; Ibn-Sall., 434.
5. Agh., xx1, 90-91; Sh., ii, 577; Sīna‘atayn, 90.
the description of horses, but rather in that of camels.\(^1\)

Such difficulties as these poets encountered in composing their poetry throw a useful light on the transitional nature of the environment in which they lived. Bedouins who were lured into urban settlements by prospects of better living were losing touch with real desert life, but since they gained their living through taking it as the subject-matter of their poetry, they had to educate themselves and draw on ancient poetry as their model. The claim of al-‘Ajjāj and Ru’ba noted earlier that they were Bedouins who saw things and described them from experience could not always be substantiated in view of the many mistakes they committed in describing familiar desert subjects. Thus when al-‘Ajjāj described a lone wild ass another Bedouin reminded him that a wild ass usually kept the company of his females and went on to recite a more accurate description.\(^2\) The mistakes and anachronisms of his son Ru’ba were by far more numerous and all indicated lack of knowledge of some simple facts of desert life and relevant Ḥāmill poetry. When he said:

You were like him who inserted his hand in a hole missing the viper (\textit{af'ā}a) but meeting the large snake (\textit{aswād}).\(^3\)

al-Asma‘ī indicated that he had committed a blunder by implying that the \textit{af'ā} was less harmful than the \textit{aswād} while in fact the reverse was true.\(^3\) In another case he described the ostrich

\(^1\) Ibn-Sall., 107.  
\(^2\) Sh., ii, 573.  
\(^3\) Sh., 579.
male in the company of numerous females thus likening him to a wild ass which was a gross misrepresentation since the former kept only one female. Similar mistakes are recorded in the poetry of Dhū-'r-Rumma. It is also worth while to note that their sometimes incomplete knowledge of the various aspects of their urban environment led them into committing some silly mistakes as when Ru’ba confused phosphorous and gold, or when al-‘Ajjāj spoke of glass oozing, and Abū-Nukhayla took the word fustūq (baked bread) to be a kind of vegetable.

The fact that the development of Umayyad poetry especially in Baṣra was heavily geared to traditional pre-Islamic poetry explains to a large extent the dominance of Bedouin elements not only in the content but also in the diction and metaphors of poets not excluding even those of urban backgrounds. But the pace of social change affected even this traditional poetry in varied ways as we have seen earlier. The impact of urban life and ideas on the structure of poetry was no less important. The influence of the quṣṣāṣās and preachers on poetry has already been hinted at. The fact that the most conservative brand of poetry - rajaz - should be the brand most exposed to this kind of religious influence reflects on the underlying motives behind the resurgence of this kind of poetry. It underlines

1. Ibid.; Ṣina‘atayn, 90; cf. many other mistakes on the authority of al-Asma‘ī, Sh., 580-583.
2. e.g. on animals, cf. Sh., ii, 518; on women, ibid., 519; cf. also Agh., xvi, 118-9, 123; Muwash., 180, 183-185.
3. Ru‘ba‘, 41; Muzhir, ii, 313.
4. Sh., ii, 574.
5. Ibid., 584.
the contention that this poetry though packed with ideas and pictures of desert life does not necessarily express real desert sentiments but rather that it was generally concocted to suit urban demands and more especially those of the learned classes. The religious factor did not affect only the theme and content of this poetry as we have seen earlier, but it also affected its structure and imagery. This is most evident in the marked departure from the conventional prelude especially in the poetry of al-‘Ajjāj and Ru’ba. In some of their poems the conventional theme of weeping over the ruined abode of the beloved is replaced by religious themes and invocations. Other poets, too, felt the need to introduce Islamic elements into what had been expressed by old cliches. Instead of beseeching God to give his two fictitious companions water according to Jahili convention, Dhū-‘r-Rumma tells them at one time:

May you two never cease to be in bliss as long as you live, and may you accompany Muḥammad on the Day of Reckoning.\[396\]

At another he says:--

O my two companions! Look out, may you be housed in a lofty stage [under] an extended shadow of paradise.\[397\]

Islamic institutions and notions were greatly utilized by poets and were often placed alongside the inherited traditions.

1. cf. Chapter V, 268-269.
3. Rumma, 121.
4. Ibid., 132; cf. 304.
Thus the ruined mosque conveniently found its place on an equal footing with the ancient encampment in the nasīb as in the line of Dhū-ʾr-Rumma:-

[Traces of abodes] were effaced but for a pole for fastening beasts, the sides of a mosque and black supports of a cooking pot.[398]

The mosque as a most conspicuous building featured also in the satire of Jarīr in a line considered by al-Farazdaq to be the severest satire upon him:

Sukayna wished that the pillars of her people’s mosque were penises of mules.[399]

The same institution was used by al-Farazdaq in his nasīb:-

She sways towards the mosque as though she is someone whose leg was broken anew walking along a rough road.[400]

The mushaf is likewise used by Jarīr in the conventional prelude to describe the effaced abode.[4]

The impact of Islam on the internal structure of poetry is even greater. Thus the idea of reward is employed by Dhū-ʾr-Rumma to describe the dedication of a wild ox charging the hunting dogs:-

He returned to the charge upon them piercing their chests as though, in his frontal assault, he is seeking heavenly reward.[401]

When the same ox defeats the dogs and runs away a famous Qurʾānic simile[6] is employed to describe his speed:-

1. Rumma, 502.
2. Naq., 322, 1053.
3. Far., 1, 363; Naq., 517; cf. also Naq., 790.
5. Rumma, 25.
As though he is a shooting star, moving with tremendous speed after a devil in a dark night.\[402\]

The familiar desert jerboa scorched by the sun is described by the same poet:

As though the fore-legs of its (i.e. desert) jerboa scorching in the sun, were the two hands of a repenting sinner asking forgiveness of God. \[403\]

Religious practices are employed to describe abstract notions. In describing the sleep of a companion of his, Dhū-ʾr-Rumma said:

Drowsiness has overwhelmed him while his head bowed to the religion of sleep late at night. \[404\]

Similes were borrowed freely from the Qurʾān to produce a desired effect. In describing the error of al-Farazdaq's ways, Jarīr said:

You have erred as did the Samaritan when he invited his people to worship the calf and they remained firmly attached to it. \[405\]

In representing the humble origin of Jarīr, al-Farazdaq said:

The spider has woven its cobweb over you, \[a destiny\] decreed upon you by the revealed Book. \[406\]

Sometimes whole Qurʾānic verses were put into poetry with minor alterations as in the line of al-Farazdaq where two verses of the Qurʾān were employed:

I have invoked the one whose power created heaven, and certainly God is nearer to me than my jugular vein and more gracious. \[407\]

1. Rumma, 27.
2. Rumma, 59.
3. Ibid., 130; cf. 158, 159.
5. Ibid., 183; cf. Q., xxix, 41; cf. also Naq., 255, 796.
6. Q., 11, 47.
7. Q., 1, 15.
The impact of the urban scene is also visible where metaphors and similes were drawn from other urban features. Jarīr draws on building in describing a huge she-camel:

She has a waist plastered over the base of her neck as a lofty building is plastered by Persian craftsmen.\[408\]

A familiar town scene is borrowed by Dhū-'r-Rumma to describe the brandishing of a she-camel's tail:

As a virgin gently whisks away town gnats from a Persian dignitary
With the tails of two peacocks tied together, standing erect in a bodice without sleeves and an elegant skirt.\[409\]

Animals were vividly described by similar metaphors derived from the luxurious urban setting. Al-'Ajjāj often endowed the wild ox with the garb of the rich and the prosperous. He described one of them returning to his covert:

He came back to his covert as a Christian would come to celebrate the feast in a high-walled church.\[410\]

The walk of another is represented as:

He walks as a proud and a light-hearted man would walk, Dressed in yellowish trousers beneath ample buttoned clothes, Or rather as a drunken town satrap whose official position is indicated by the crown and bracelets.\[411\]

The dignified posture of the emir is often used by the same poet in this theme:

He (i.e. the ox) walks over the sands of Abū-Ḥibrīr as the emir or the emir's brother would walk, Moving proudly as a mighty official or a grand town dignitary.\[412\]

1. Ibid., 479; cf. 'Ajj., 27.
2. Rumma, 510-511.
3. 'Ajj., 69.
4. Ibid., 29.
5. Ibid., 31.
The deep influence of the urban scene is nowhere more marked than in his subtle descriptions where colours and materials are blended in vivid forms, as in his portrait of the formation of mirage:

The glittering heat has woven
Through the flickering of desert mirage, plaits like pieces of silk-cloth.\[413]\[1

Delightful colours and bright clothings go into the descriptions of animals. An ox is described:-

So that when dawn shed light on him,
He appeared in the colour of a blossom as though he was a crowned Roman,
Dressed in linen robes, or as a crowned Ḥimyarite monarch.\[414]\[2

But urban life was not only a means to enliven Bedouin themes. It was also a life to be enjoyed for its own sake. The effect of life in Başra on Jarīr appears not only in his pleasant nasīb but also in his descriptions of real girls in the town. He said of one of them:-

A maiden of urban background fond of wearing thin gowns, The most hateful to her of her two garments is the one still remaining [on her]; she is fed from the purse of a rich man,
She is sure of her subsistence [even] if he should die - he himself she would find it easy to part from.
In laughing she reveals glittering sharp teeth [white] as camomil-flowers swaying on a dark ground.\[415]\[3

This picture of Jarīr confirms the conclusion of al-Farazdaq when he said:-

I say that white-skinned town girls are a source of death when they twist [their bodies] beneath garments.\[416]\[4

1. Ibid., 27.
2. 'Ajj., 70.
4. Far., i, 23; cf. i, 210-211 for an impressive portrait of another girl.
The commercial life of Basra left a faint imprint on the structure of poetry. Few lines could be detected where its influence is visible such as the line of Yazīd ibn-Mufarrigh:

You have established a market for praise and never before had a market been established for praise.\[417]\[1

Ru’ba employed commercial terms only in dealing with youth and the onslaught of old age:

Would that the days of youth return, and would that youth was a commodity brought from the merchant,
We would have given him the monopoly of sale before he begins to haggle if only he could bring back bright youth.\[418]\[2

But the poet knows that:

White hair is the worst commodity even if sold to a merchant through a broker.\[419]\[3

In fact it is unsaleable:

For white hair there is no demand even if trade is carried on it.\[420]\[4

The professionalism which went into the creation of much of this poetry could not be overrated. The length to which a poet as al-Farazdaq usually went to compose his poetry\[5
justified his pride in his craft which he considered superior to that of the Jahili masters.\[6

In the face of professionalism all round them poets had to become professional and to treat their art as an elaborate industry in which many skills are involved together with a good measure of inventiveness

1. Ibn-Khall., Waf., ii, 289.
2. Ru’b., 51.
3. Ibid., 57.
4. Ibid., 109; cf. 30.
5. cf. ‘Askari, Diwan al-Ma’ani, i, 113; ‘Umda, i, 204, 207.
6. Far., ii, 142.
and effort as the lines of Dhū-ʾr-Rumma indicate:-

Many an unfamiliar verse I spent upon sleepless nights
seeking to avert its defects and absurdities,
So I spent the night erecting it, fashioning thereof
rhymes to which I see no parallel,
Being unfamiliar, known everywhere, created from scratch.[421]

With Ru’ba the craft of the poet matches in skill and
exertion that of the accomplished weaver:-

I, being the poet constantly called upon for recitation,
compose [my poems] as the skilful weaver decorates
the best quality of royal cloth.[422]

He even depicts himself in the act of composing his poetry as
a real weaver handling his loom, manipulating its different
parts to get the desired result. 3 This meticulous concern
with excellence and novelty reflects the high standard of the
audience to which this poetry was addressed. Most of the
caliphs, their emirs and the dignitaries around them were
discerning critics, and poets who sought their favours knew
full well the efforts they had to undergo before earning their
approval. 4 The necessity to please the élite in society
which set the artistic and linguistic standards and provided
the material benefits, influenced poets immensely in their
approach to poetry which resulted in producing poetry of which
many poets boasted as being 'ğharîb', not only in the sense
of 'antiquated' as much of rajaz certainly was, but also in

1. Rumma, 440-441; cf. 168-169.
2. Ru’b., 115.
3. Ibid., 61; cf. also 38; Ibn-Qut., Ma‘āni, ii, 814.
4. e.g. cf. Muwash., 215-216 for disapproval of Walīd I of
‘Ajzaj’s poetry; ibid., 178-9 for Bilāl’s criticism of
Dhū-ʾr-Rumma; ibid., 239 for ‘Abd-al-Walik’s reaction to
Dhū-ʾr-Rumma’s poem; cf. Agh., xviii, 140 for Maslama’s
encounter with Abū-Nukhayla.
the sense of unfamiliar and contrived as the earlier lines of Dhū-'r-Rumma\(^1\) indicated.

Other considerations, however, were affecting the course of poetic style in a different manner. We have already noted the tendency to group poets into those who appealed to the general public and those who appealed to men of learning.\(^2\) The polarization of social classes into élite and unsophisticated masses who increasingly lost the traditional linguistic chasteness of an 'Arab' in addition to the other factors attending the urban growth of the ārō accentuated this tendency and resulted by the end of the Umayyad era in forcing the same poet to adopt two different styles each addressed to the respective group he had in mind as we have noted in the poetry of Bashshār.\(^3\) This tendency, however, was not visible only in the poetry of Bashshār and as-Sayyid al-Ḥīmyarī, both of whom reached full stature early in the 'Abbāsid era, but is also visible in the highly conventional rajaz poetry. Already under the impact of the ṣuṣṣāṣ, rajaz was becoming once more a popular medium as it had been in the first place before its development in the Umayyad period. Under Abū-Nukhayla\(^4\) and al-‘Umānī\(^5\) it was transformed into an easy medium depicting common experiences of everyday life.

1. cf. also Jar., 446.
5. Ibid., xviii, 78-82; Ibn-Mu’tazz, Tabaqāt, 109-114; Bayān, 1, 48, 131.
Another sign of the changing circumstances was the employment of Persian words in poetry. Major poets such as Jarir and al-Farazdaq used some common Persian words, but those who became famous for this practice were Ibn-Mufarrigh and al-‘Umani.

2. Bayan, i, 132.
3. Ibid.
أثنا عشر سنة حاكى، وَرَحَمَ نَا
فَوَخَ اللهِ عِداً بِعَدَةٍ وَلَوَجِّهَتْ
لَوَّنَّى يَزِيدُ بُعْرَاءَ مَارْيَةَ
وَمَنْ يَزِدُ خَالِدًا إِلَى ذَاتِ شَعْرٍ
قَادَوْا سَفِيقًا فَدَاوَوْا
وَكَمْ مِنْ لَيْتِ قَرَفَ قَرَفَتْ لَهُ أَسْمَعَ
فَإِنَّ ثَنْيَتِ عُنُقَهُ مَعَ مَمْعَاءٍ
لَفَتْ أَسْمَعَتْ خَشَى الفُسْرَادِ نَاشِأَ
لَقَدْ مَسَّ حَلَيْي في خَلَدِيَة مثْلِهَا
وَشَهِدَ عَلَيْهِ الْمَسْتَفْقَرُ اللَّهُ أَنَّ
فَعَصْنَ اللَّهُ إِلَّا مِنْ مَيْسِرٍ
بَيْنِ السَّمَسِ وَهُدَّى كَبْرَ سَرَا
يَكِنَّ السَّبَبُ نَكَوْنُ سَرَا
يَكِنَّ سَبَبُ نَكَوْنُ سَرَا
وَقَدْ دَهَبَ الْمَثْقَلُ بَيْنَ الْدِّينَاءِ
كَفَيْلاً مِنْ دَيْنَاءٍ عِنَانَهَا
وَصَدِّرَ في الْفُسَافِكِ كُلّ قَمْسِيَةٍ
وَرُكَّبَ إِلَى كَفَّانِهِ مِنْ كَانَ ذَينَهِ
وَإِنَّ لَكَ لِبَيْعَةٍ غَرْبَةٍ
خَيْرُ بِأَفْوَاءِ النَّهَارِ كَأَنْثاً
أَللَّهِ إِنِّا كُفِئَ كَلِبٌ بَيْضَعُها
لقد ذُكِّت مَعِيْن مَعْمَمٌ حَرَبٌ مَرَيْمٌ
وَهَامَّةٌ إِنَّمَا جَانِبَتِهُ قَيْسًا يَسَالِمُ
أَخْرُ الْمَجْعَدُ كَغَرَّةٌ عَلَى الْيَكْرِمِ مَعَهُ
أَعْطِيْ اللَّهُ لِلْمُشْعَرَاءِ مَقْيَةً

وَأَمَّ الْوَقُدُ وَفَطَنَتْ فِي فَقِيمٍ
وَفَقِيَمُ الْيَدُ بِبَابِ الْسَّعِيدِ
وُنَوَّلُ الْغَرَّإِ مَقُوَّهُ بِأَنَّ يَقْضُ
يَا قَدْ قُمْتُ لَمْ أُهْدِي لِلْمُسْلِمِ
تَنَاهَا فَأَلَى أُرْدُنَ هَمَارِكَ
إِذَا قَالَ غَلُو قَوْمِ مَعَوَّدٍ مَفْسِدِهِ
أَلْعَدُوا غَيْرَ وَقَائِمَ بِبَنْبِهَا

وَأَنَّ سَارَا بَأَفْضُي الْأَرْضِ سَارَا
بِقَبْلُ هَلْ قَامَ مَالَوْكُمُ بَقَيلْ
مَا رَأَيْتُ لَقَلْ عَلَيْكُمُ بَيْنِ يَوْمٍ
وَكَانَ الَّذِي كَى ذِكَارُكُمْ غَدَا
غَضِبَتْ عَلَيْهِنَّ أَنَّ عَلَّمَتْ بُاَشْع

وَأَقُرَّ كِتَابَ اللَّيْلَةِ لِلْبَعْلِ
أَذَٰلِكَ تَزِيدُونَهُمُ الْمَعْلُوْمَةَ
كُلُّ كَلِبٍ مَّيِّضَةٌ وَجَعَلَهُ
وَكُلُّ كَلِمَيْ ذَوَّابَ أَنَّهَا
لَمَّا بَلَغَ الْمَيْسِرُ الْفَرْزِيدُ قَيْدُهُ
لَبِطَعَانِ مَنْ غَرَّةٌ مِّبَاشِعُ
ثَلَاثَ عَامَّاتٍ مَا أَرَى مِّنْ عَمَاِةٍ
الآيات العربية من القرآن الكريم:

26. "لتين نتعبد ونعيب
والخالق من فسيف كلام
ذريعة من الإسلام ذات حكمة

27. "ألا استمتعت أنه من سوتك
ولو أعلنت أن الوثبات أشتك
لا يعمر وقد فيت نفسها لما
فإن ذلك قبلي كأن تسرت ندمته
أنا الضاحي على ما أنت

28. "ألا ضربت عين خارجيا من خبيه
أي فالم من كل شيء عيوبه
أنا ضربت على ضعفه لحد ما

29. "ما في كتاب الله تقدم رأيا
ما في اللسان من عين يلود يا
بسم الله الرحمن الرحيم

30. "ما في كتاب الله تقدم رأيا
ما في اللسان من عين يلود يا
بسم الله الرحمن الرحيم

31. "ما في كتاب الله تقدم رأيا
ما في اللسان من عين يلود يا
بسم الله الرحمن الرحيم

32. "ما في كتاب الله تقدم رأيا
ما في اللسان من عين يلود يا
بسم الله الرحمن الرحيم

33. "ما في كتاب الله تقدم رأيا
ما في اللسان من عين يلود يا
بسم الله الرحمن الرحيم

34. "ما في كتاب الله تقدم رأيا
ما في اللسان من عين يلود يا
بسم الله الرحمن الرحيم

35. "ما في كتاب الله تقدم رأيا
ما في اللسان من عين يلود يا
بسم الله الرحمن الرحيم

36. "ما في كتاب الله تقدم رأيا
ما في اللسان من عين يلود يا
بسم الله الرحمن الرحيم

37. "ما في كتاب الله تقدم رأيا
ما في اللسان من عين يلود يا
بسم الله الرحمن الرحيم

38. "ما في كتاب الله تقدم رأيا
ما في اللسان من عين يلود يا
بسم الله الرحمن الرحيم

39. "ما في كتاب الله تقدم رأيا
ما في اللسان من عين يلود يا
بسم الله الرحمن الرحيم

40. "ما في كتاب الله تقدم رأيا
ما في اللسان من عين يلود يا
بسم الله الرحمن الرحيم

41. "ما في كتاب الله تقدم رأيا
ما في اللسان من عين يلود يا
بسم الله الرحمن الرحيم

42. "ما في كتاب الله تقدم رأيا
ما في اللسان من عين يلود يا
بسم الله الرحمن الرحيم

43. "ما في كتاب الله تقدم رأيا
ما في اللسان من عين يلود يا
بسم الله الرحمن الرحيم

44. "ما في كتاب الله تقدم رأيا
ما في اللسان من عين يلود يا
بسم الله الرحمن الرحيم

45. "ما في كتاب الله تقدم رأيا
ما في اللسان من عين يلود يا
بسم الله الرحمن الرحيم

46. "ما في كتاب الله تقدم رأيا
ما في اللسان من عين يلود يا
بسم الله الرحمن الرحيم

47. "ما في كتاب الله تقدم رأيا
ما في اللسان من عين يلود يا
بسم الله الرحمن الرحيم

48. "ما في كتاب الله تقدم رأيا
ما في اللسان من عين يلود يا
بسم الله الرحمن الرحيم

49. "ما في كتاب الله تقدم رأيا
ما في اللسان من عين يلود يا
بسم الله الرحمن الرحيم

50. "ما في كتاب الله تقدم رأيا
ما في اللسان من عين يلود يا
بسم الله الرحمن الرحيم

الآيات متاحة للقراءة والفهم في هذه الصفحة من القرآن الكريم.
37
38
39
40
41
42
43
44
45
46
47
48
49
50

وَمَسْتَعِدُ عِنْدَ عُمَراً إِذَا أَتَاهَا
رَجُلٌ أَمْرُ مُسْتَعِدٍ مَّا كَانَ
سَجِّعَ جَنُّفًا لَيْتَيْ أَبِيَّا

وَبِسُوْءِ أَحْوَامَهُ أَيَّانَ
هُنَّاءَةَ وَعَشِيرَةَ وَسُبُقَ databases
كَيْلَ تَقْرَى اٰجَرَاءٍ وَكَمْ يَلْحَقُ
وَلَكِنْ حَقَّاً مِّنْ فِيّاسَ عَلَى دَحِيلٍ
وَكُلُّ مَعْدٍ فَجَرْتُ فِرْضَهُمْ
فَأَرْجَعْ إِلَى حَامِلٍ فَرَسِيَهُمْ
كَمَا مِنْ مُعْنِيَ كَفَاكَ تَنْهَٰئِهِ
وَمَيْلُ عَبْرَ اللهِ حَضْنَا بِجَارِيَةٍ
وَالَّيْسَغَيْنِ يَمَّا وَتَنْثَيُ
بَيْنَ جَالِدٍ مِّنْ عِينِي إِلَى الرَّدِي
كَأَنَّهُمْ لَيَكَمُّونَ مَوَارَعٍ

سَلَِّمُوُا عِبْسَ أَحْوَامَهُ
وَلَقَدَ غَرُّوْنَتْ وَأَضْيَعَتْ
وَالَّيْسَغَيْنِ بَلْرَأْ تَأْثِرَتْ إِذَا أَقْبَ"
ويَجْعَل الْرُّطْب عَنْ بُني الأَسْفَار الصَّحِيْهِ المُزْنُونَ

51

الْحَمْلُ عَلَى قَلْب مُحَلْلٍ فِي حَجْرٍ فَيَا عَمَّرْنَاهُ بِنَّى حَجَرٍ
وَلَمْ يُؤْسِدْ حَجَرَهُ حَجَرَةً عَنْهُ حَتَّى مَا حَمَّلَهُ الْحَمْلُ عَلَى
حَجَرٍ حَتَّى مَا كَانَ المُحْمَّلُ فَرِيْيَا فَهَحَصَّرَ
وَقَسِمَ عَيْنًا مَّيَّرَ كِنْدَرًا تَفَغَّرَ
حَتَّى عَلَى السَّنَّةِ عَلَى هُمْ عَشَرٌ

52

كُنْ ضَرِبًا دَلْلَا بِالجَرْحِ
وَلَا بِمَسْبُوقٍ يَقْدَرُ النَّفَاقَ
إِلَّا بَقِيَاءً عَنْمَ الأَعْرَاقَ
مِنَ المَخْلَقِينَ وَالرُّبُعِ الْبَاقِ
53

بأعثون جودي يفع سر
ومالهم غير حَكَيَّة

54

عَتْب بَذَيْلَيْم أبَو هر
وكانا ساءت الناس قبل سيم
وكان فيبيا مالا عن بلالا
فما ذلك بآن البال مسهم

55

أط التبلغ مسامعا على سولا
تحم آن أندر من ضايع

56

فإن قصت قريش أوقبب
هم عدد أطواب دل على حر
ولولا سك ملما ما توهم
بماك العري وطاب منهم
فتمل عن نعل ف ل يد
أعود له مقالا عن أدا

57

فأقيم قومنا كلما

58

ولما كفينا الامسكتى موعد
صددها المراسه حتى يليده
وخن قصنا منتببا وان مسحرب

59

وإذا نتم تمن لم قلق أنا كافر
وقف آم الناس مسرة بسطة
وإن كان قد علق مثين حية

60

كري نص الإيمان على حقا

61

قمتم على أهل العرائ، وكنتم
فلن لا تبعر الذين كيلة
62 وَجَنَّا بِنَيْنَ مِنَ الْأَوْلَادِ دِينًا وَأَنَّمُهُمْ لِيَنَا الْبَيْنَ الْأَيْنَ الْكَيْلَ.
63 إِذَا اقْتَبَلُوا سَلَوا صَوْاً فَعَلَّهُ الإِسْلَامُ مِنْ مَطَابِ.
64 فِي مَتَّى عَلَّهَا مُعَمِّدًا فَلَمْ يَنْتَهِ مِنْ أُمَّةٍ بَيْنَا
65 دَعْوَاتُ المَلُوكِ أَبا حِضَابٍ جَالَا،
66 بَعْدُ النَّسَادِ الَّذِي قَدْ قَامَ بِهِ
67 إِذَا حَارَبَ الْبَيْنَ الْأَيْنَ مَنَافِفٍ
68 وَإِذَا مَنَافِفُ تُنَافَفُنْ عَلَىٰ
69 سَبِيلِ الْبَيْنَ أَكَثَّرُ تُعَبِّرُ
70 عَمَراً ذَاتَ دُوَافْنٍ وأَحاجٍ
71 كَأَنَّهُ دَيْ رَبِّي عَسِيكَ شَفِيعٌ
72 وَأَفْسَنْ قَلْبِيِّيّ لَكَ الْرَّقَابُ
73 لَمَّا جَنَّ الْبَيْنِ لَمْ تَضْعَفْنَا
74 يَدُ قَدْ عَلَّهَا مُعَمِّدًا حَنَّانِ.
75 وَحَتِّيْاً شَكِيلٌ ابْنَا لَبْنَانَ كَانَتَا
76 فَمَا رَسَّنَا الشَّكَيْلُ خَفَافِهِ
77 مُنَافِفًا بَيْنِيّ فِي مَسْكِينٍ يُؤْتُونَ
78 عَلَّهُمَا عَلَىٰ قَدْ عَلَّهَا مُعَمِّدًا حَنَّانِ.
79 أَخْرُجُوهَا إِلَيْهَا وَهِيَ فَاصِرَةٌ
80 لَمْ يَعْدُ السَّنَةُ إِلَّا مَا كَرَّحَ
81 مِاَهِدُ لَعَدَانَ السَّنَةُ مَيْسِبٌ.
ولا طلباً يوماً ضعيفة تأتي
لتنسل عنها خالصها تؤبة
سوى الله الذي يسره الله
إذا نادى جنّه عند أحبابه
مع النصر المتكرئة الغضا با
اختلف ذا المعاصي فاستبي
جبب لم تجلب في إلياس الغول
رجال جنّيهم ذو النجوم غايل
وحكيت عليهم سامبات النزل
إذا كبحوا الآسوات بين الكافل
فصلهم أمثالاً شروراً، وانبل
ذلّ أوّلهم وأبرزهم المؤمنين مصيب
وليس يقبل الغائب حصر
ما قام بالناس أحلاً ولا جميعه
وأنت يا قمي حَتَّى تقبل
وجماح الأذى فيها غياب مغفل
فيكَم قلّيس لنعلها حَوْيل
يسَبِيل ملَّنَّ على مسيحي مشلوب
وأتن عمان بعد تأيَ لبيب
عن أزي مالفع عيسى ما في
بها ميلك إن ذات أورث منبر
رَأَتْ أبها جهت إني أراك
أنت قوابيها الإيمن ذو المهر
مسورة مقر كأن مثما قريجاها
صفت تلك بيئة سبناء عفرين
93
إلى حين أن جلب السماء إمانة
94
فلخت أبدى القدر...
للذين أتت في الأولى خليفة
95
أنت الذي نعت الله أنت
كم ترى قسم ٦٣
96
فأنا دعومنا وأنتذا
97
أنت ألبنت ما نعتك لنا
98
قد أتم إلا أتم عيسى علمتها
99
وإن ساحتها الأشلاء دواف النع..
100
ياخيف حتى وقت تخلله قرماً
101
ولكان بعد المسطحة عن عمار
لكنت الذي يخارس الله بعده
102
لحي ليسر به عيسى وبينة
فانت إن لا كان ياها صاحبه
103
فأتم لها دساحها يكب كرك
104
فإن كرب قد صنعت جانب
إذا عانت من آخر السر دعنة
من قاهل أدى الإله ما كيماه
105
فلا يقبل تعذر أمر مقربته
والشعبي إن ملكت ملامة
كنت ولي أفقل ولد ولي
106
وقالوه إن من في السكن ماك
ويبين ابن عم المزج يقوينه
107
يسبالغ معاوية بن هند
فقلته لم يدري أن تسلم
يفقود به أو يحرج عن كسر
الله سُفُرَبَ النَّارُ نَاهِيًا
أَلْفُدُحُ قُرْبًا نَغْرَاءً مَثَلًا
قالَ، "هَيَّهِ، هُيَّهُ، هُيَّهُ" ِأَرْهَبَ لِلَّهَ.
أَتَى، عِنَدَمَا مَنْ رَأَى هَذَا، أَمَرَ بِتَفْصِيلٍ.
فِيَّكَ بِأَعْمَالِهِ، كَمَا أُنْفِقَ عَلَيْهِ، أَنَّهُ،
إِذَا ذَقَتْ نَفْسِهِ نَعْلُونَ، تَأَكَّلْتُ.

فِيْرُ الْآَشْدَادَ حَوَّلًا بِالْوَيْد
وَذَهَبَ إِلَىَّ حُجَّةٌ السَّفَار
ذَاهِبًا، وَالْبَيْنَةَ، هَكَذَا قَوْيًا إِلَى الْفَرْقَةِ. مَا نَخَلَّهُ فَرْماً
فِي أَيْضِ اِلْحَجَّةِ إِنَّهُ أَحَجَّهُ لَهُ
فَأُنَا لَا نَرَى إِلَّا نَحْنُوْيَنَّ، رَأِيَوْنَا
إِذَا حَوَّلَتْ اِلْحُجَّةِ تَأَكَّلْتُ.

أَحْتَقَأَ الرَّكْبُانُ عَلَيْهِ، وَرَأْيِهِ
فِي جَلْبِهِ، وَلِفَتْيَةٌ وَطَائِعُهُ.
وَأَوْلَى حِيْلَةٌ اللهِ أَنَّهُ كَأَنَّهُ

أَذْهَبَ إِلَى يَمِينِ الْبَيْنَاءِ، وَرَجُلٌ
وَبِالْبَيْنَاءِ فَقَوْيًا، حَيْثَ يَنْمُيُ
عَلَى الْقَبْدِ فِي صَوْنِهَا الْمَلْمَلْمَمَ،
تُبَنَّى مِنْ اِلْجَعْلِ الْفَيْدِ، وَيَنْمُيُ

أَذْهَبَ إِلَى يَمِينِ الْبَيْنَاءِ، وَرَجُلٌ
وَبِالْبَيْنَاءِ فَقَوْيًا، حَيْثَ يَنْمُيُ
عَلَى الْقَبْدِ فِي صَوْنِهَا الْمَلْمَلْمَمَ،
تُبَنَّى مِنْ اِلْجَعْلِ الْفَيْدِ، وَيَنْمُيُ

أَذْهَبَ إِلَى يَمِينِ الْبَيْنَاءِ، وَرَجُلٌ
وَبِالْبَيْنَاءِ فَقَوْيًا، حَيْثَ يَنْمُيُ
عَلَى الْقَبْدِ فِي صَوْنِهَا الْمَلْمَلْمَمَ،
تُبَنَّى مِنْ اِلْجَعْلِ الْفَيْدِ، وَيَنْمُيُ

أَذْهَبَ إِلَى يَمِينِ الْبَيْنَاءِ، وَرَجُلٌ
وَبِالْبَيْنَاءِ فَقَوْيًا، حَيْثَ يَنْمُيُ
عَلَى الْقَبْدِ فِي صَوْنِهَا الْمَلْمَلْمَمَ،
تُبَنَّى مِنْ اِلْجَعْلِ الْفَيْدِ، وَيَنْمُيُ

أَذْهَبَ إِلَى يَمِينِ الْبَيْنَاءِ، وَرَجُلٌ
وَبِالْبَيْنَاءِ فَقَوْيًا، حَيْثَ يَنْمُيُ
عَلَى الْقَبْدِ فِي صَوْنِهَا الْمَلْمَلْمَمَ،
تُبَنَّى مِنْ اِلْجَعْلِ الْفَيْدِ، وَيَنْمُيُ

أَذْهَبَ إِلَى يَمِينِ الْبَيْنَاءِ، وَرَجُلٌ
وَبِالْبَيْنَاءِ فَقَوْيًا، حَيْثَ يَنْمُيُ
عَلَى الْقَبْدِ فِي صَوْنِهَا الْمَلْمَلْمَمَ،
تُبَنَّى مِنْ اِلْجَعْلِ الْفَيْدِ، وَيَنْمُيُ
أowel بالحج حتى كما أنا
إذا ذكر مألاً دخرب خيفة
هنا أنا يا ذاك في الأرض كادماً
طوق نسي في لهلاق أوضاع
أما من جميع داعف ليغمة
والولون من حفي جداً شردة.

كاد القواد تبشير المراة به
في الدار: لا يكتب تدوجيس في
في جماعة يردي فيهم دوماء
فقلت: هل ينبغي أن حضرتم
ما تنتبه عنه فإني نست فار
وما يبولك من، أنا لاشه.

لقد أستخت منك عائلاً فملا
ولا أن تصرس الحكاء أهاء
على مرحب، إذا أبتين
فجعلنا دابن يرسف النور
كậy الناس قد حافك في

إماها اكيرج ل الناس البرقا
فانه ال رابل من جافة
ولابت قلوب الناس رماوربا
تقول ونبيها ابيضان: ملأى
نبع غير البجاء أن جلبه
ومن يأمر البجاء واين تنه.

وقد خفت في لآيا الرب ورم
إذا هن الاغتي وهو سام وناوله
لول ولد من ختي شهير تهذ
ب في متر كرية اشتماله نعك
ب الناجي إلى ضياء شهير
كانت تسعة أفراد يمتهن
لمه واعبرة قد كتبت مصابل
إذا قد أتمرت في فؤاد شراحه
وضوير بأجاعمنة حذاء.

115
116
117
118
119
120
121
122
358

وَمَنْ أَوَّلُ الْجَهَّازِ ۚ أَيَّا عِقَابِهِ
وَما ذَنُبَهُ عَلَى الْيَوْمِ الْأَخِرِ
وَخَفْتُ كَيْ لَمْ أُسْتَنْزِلْ كَأَنْ

وَحَآوْرَةٌ مَّثْلَ الْقُورُ نَزُّو قَوْمِهِ
وَدَاعَا الْبُنُّ بِأَحْلِ الْعَرَفِ ۖ فَأَيَّاءَ
١٢٦ۚ لَقَدْ جَبَّةَ الْجَهَّازِ يَاهْتَبْ سَلَةُ
ۚ قَلْ لِأَكْبَارِ إِنَّا نَأْخَرُ سَرُّهُ
١٢٧ۚ فَقَطَّضَ سَنَاتٌ نَّهَنَّ ۖ هَآَا ۚ أَوَّمَنْ يُصَلِّوْمُ كَصُلْوَةَ الْجَهَّازِ
١٢٨ۚ أَمَّلَهَا كُلُّ ذِكْرٌ سَوَاءٌ
١٢٩ۚ خَذِّهِ الْبَاجَّ وَالْهِيَأَةُ ۖ بِهِ مَعْرَأَةُ عِشْرَةٌ ۖ مُصْعَبَةٌ بَعْضُهَا بَعْضًا حَكِيمًا
١٣٠ۚ عَشَرُونُ الْشَّجَاعُ الَّذِي يَرِى الْأَلْوَاهِ
١٣١ۚ أَيْ كَذَّبَ ۚ كَذَّبَ ۚ كَذَّابٌ
١٣٢ۚ أَوْهَرُ ۖ أَوْهَرُ ۚ لَهُ صُلوَةٌ
١٣٣ۚ لَا يُدْخَلُ لِأَوْهِرَ ۖ لَهُ جَهَانٌ
١٣٤ۚ وَقَدْ كَانَ ۖ دُونَهُ ۚ بِهِ يَنْتَبُّ
١٣٥ۚ لَفَّ ۖ لَفَّ ۚ وَهُوَ مِنْ عِشْرِ النَّقَاطِ عِيْنٌ
١٣٦ۚ لَسْفَنُ ۖ بِهِ يَنْتَبُّ ۖ عَيْنٌ
١٣٧ۚ وَکَأَنَّا كَرَى ذَاعُ أَمَانَ سَفَاءً
١٣٨ۚ عَلَى الْبَلَاءِ ۚ لَيْلاً حَتَّى يَكُونَ
١٣٩ۚ إِذَا سُعِّرَ الْيَلِيْدُ ۚ تَأَلَّ ۚ كُتْبُ
١٤٠ۚ عَقَبُ يَتِّي الْيَلِيِّدُ شَفِيعُ عِنْصِمُ
١٤١ۚ وَكَأَنَّا كُرَى ۖ مِثْلَهُ إِنَّ أُمَّرُ
١٤٢ۚ إِذَا عَلَقَتْ حَالَائِلُ ۖ حَتَّى يُعْتَدِ
١٤٣ۚ بِأَيْنَ السِّيَاهُ ۚ لَنْ ۚ لَهُ مَرَكُّ
إِنَّ اِبْنَيْنَ فَأَخَذَنَاهُما وَقَبَنَاهُما مَنَعَ الرَّسَّامَاءَ وَأَرَادَ عَيْنَ اللَّهِ جَنَّةً فَأَكَتَبْنَاهَا وَبَيْنَيْهَا سَبْعَ مِنْهَا مَيْسِرٌ إِنَّ الْمَوْتَ إِنَّا كَانَ نَضْرَضُهُم مَّنْ تَفْيَضُ. وَلَقَدْ كَسَبْتَ سَيَّانَ كَمَا مِنْكُمْ

لَنَنُفِرْ الْمَجَازِ الْمَعْتَمَمُ لَقَدْ أَصَّبْنَا الْحُظُّ مِنْهُمُ الْأَثْمَاءَ كَانُوا يَرْكُوهَا فَذَلِكَ مَكَأَسَ أَمْرُهُمْ وَكَانَ اِبْنُ يَتْمِينٍ أَنَّا نَعِينُهَا. مَا كَانَ الْإِسْلَامُ عَلَى الْأَرْضِ عَلَى الْإِسْلَامِ عَلَى الْإِسْلَامِ.

إِنَّ كَنْنَ مَعَ بَلَاغَةَ فَقْرَتْ عَيْنَاً فِي مَارَبِهِ. عَيْنَةً بِهِ بَعْدًا ذِيَّتَا بَيْنَهَا.

وَكَانَ لَهَا الْمَذْهَبُ وَالْمَذْهَبُ وَالْمَذْهَبُ وَالْمَذْهَبُ. يُؤْمَنُ عَلَيْهِمْ بِالْغَيْبَ عَلَى الْغَيْبَ. يُؤْمَنُ عَلَيْهِمْ بِالْغَيْبَ عَلَى الْغَيْبَ. يُؤْمَنُ عَلَيْهِمْ بِالْغَيْبَ عَلَى الْغَيْبَ.

هُكَيْكَةَ أُدِّي الْعَلِيْفَةَ عَصْرَةٌ فَإِنَّ وَكِيْلَهَا حُرُبَ خَالِدٌ كَانَ.

أَبَاهَا: مَا أَحْيَيْتُ قَاتِلًا إِنْ سَمِعْتُ أَفَوْقُ مِنْ ذَهَابِ. أَبَاهَا: عَنْ أَوْفِيَّ مِنْ ذَهَابِ.

وَلَتْ مَسَّهَا الْرُّكَابُ مَوْتًا وَلَدَدَ عَلَيْهِمْ إِذَا فَرَارَ أَمْرُهُ وَأَمْرُهُ وَأَمْرُهُ وَأَمْرُهُ. إِنَّ شَكَّ الْمَخُوْقِ عَلَى الْخَيْرَاءَ لَذَّمَّهَا. إِنَّ شَكَّ الْمَخُوْقِ عَلَى الْخَيْرَاءَ لَذَّمَّهَا. إِنَّ شَكَّ الْمَخُوْقِ عَلَى الْخَيْرَاءَ لَذَّمَّهَا.

أَمْرُ الْمُؤْمِنِينَ وَايْتُ وَايْتُ أَرْضُ الْمُؤْمِنِينَ أَرْضُ الْمُؤْمِنِينَ أَرْضُ الْمُؤْمِنِينَ أَرْضُ الْمُؤْمِنِينَ. وَلَمْ يَكُنْ قَالَهَا إِلَّا بَكَّاهَا وَكَفَّاهَا وَكَفَّاهَا وَكَفَّاهَا نَفْسَهُ بالْفَلْحَاءِ.
مَثَّلَ عَظَمَةَ مِنْ يُرَى لَمْ يَرَى لَهَا
وَأَصْبَحَتْ مَا قَدْ مَنَكَتْهُمُ
لَوَلَّوْقَةَ مُنِّ عِلْمَانًا لَّوْنَذٍ لَّا
مَا تَسْجَحُ مَنْ حَيْثُ يَتَّقَحَقُ
إِنْ يَتَّرَفَّعُ الْكُرَمُ مِنْ كَرَأٍ مَّرَارٍ
إِذَا سَكَتَتُ أَنثى فَوَزَّت
قَلَتْ: أَنثى اللَّهُ قَبْلَمَا ذِئِبً
فَرَلَّوْدَا تَرَايَنِي الْقَرَاءَتَنَّ
تَكْتُ كَلِمَةً أَذِنَةً لَّمْ يَدْهَبَ
وَلَا كَاَيْبَاً بَعْدَ اللهِ خَيْرَ مِنْ أَرَى
إِلَى كَيْبٍ حَاجٍ مُتَسَّكٍ عِلْيَهُ
أَهَا رَيْحَةُ أَقْلَمَتْهَا إِنَّهَا
فَلَوْلَا أَقْلَمَتْهَا أَقْلَمَّهَا
فَلَوْلَا كَأَنْهَيْتْهَا بِذَرَوا.
فَلَا مَا كَأَنْهَيْتْهَا بِذَرَوا
وُرْدَيْنِ الْئِزَاءِ كَأَنْهَا مَلَّبَأَهَا
أَصْبَحَتْ بِأَنثى الْإِذْنَاءَتُ
وَقَالَتْ: أَنثى اللَّهُ قَبْلَمَا ذِئِبً
فَرَلَّوْدَا تَرَايَنِي الْقَرَاءَتَنَّ
تَكْتُ كَلِمَةً أَذِنَةً لَّمْ يَدْهَبَ
وَلَا كَاَيْبَاً بَعْدَ اللهِ خَيْرَ مِنْ أَرَى
إِلَى كَيْبٍ حَاجٍ مُتَسَّكٍ عِلْيَهُ
أَهَا رَيْحَةُ أَقْلَمَتْهَا إِنَّهَا
فَلَوْلَا أَقْلَمَتْهَا أَقْلَمَّهَا
فَلَوْلَا كَأَنْهَيْتْهَا بِذَرَوا.
فَلَا مَا كَأَنْهَيْتْهَا بِذَرَوا
وُرْدَيْنِ الْئِزَاءِ كَأَنْهَا مَلَّبَأَهَا
أَصْبَحَتْ بِأَنثى الْإِذْنَاءَتُ
وَقَالَتْ: أَنثى اللَّهُ قَبْلَمَا ذِئِبً
فَرَلَّوْدَا تَرَايَنِي الْقَرَاءَتَنَّ
تَكْتُ كَلِمَةً أَذِنَةً لَّمْ يَدْهَبَ
وَلَا كَاَيْبَاً بَعْدَ اللهِ خَيْرَ مِنْ أَرَى
إِلَى كَيْبٍ حَاجٍ مُتَسَّكٍ عِلْيَهُ
أَهَا رَيْحَةُ أَقْلَمَتْهَا إِنَّهَا
فَلَوْلَا أَقْلَمَتْهَا أَقْلَمَّهَا
فَلَا مَا كَأَنْهَيْتْهَا بِذَرَوا.
فَلَا مَا كَأَنْهَيْتْهَا بِذَرَوا
وُرْدَيْنِ الْئِزَاءِ كَأَنْهَا مَلَّبَأَهَا
أَصْبَحَتْ بِأَنثى الْإِذْنَاءَتُ
WebRequest
اِنَّها قَدْ قَالَتْ اِنْسَانٌ كَيِّمٌ مِنْهَا
وَعَدَّتْهَا لِحَوَالَةٍ بَادِرٍ شَمَرْجَةٌ
وَلَوْلَا سَنٌّ مُرَوَّانٌ لَّا يُذْهَبُ مِنْهَا
بِالْدِّرْبِ لِرَكْشَةٍ النَّقَاءِ وَالْفُكْرِ
إِنَّا لَنَرْجِحُ مِنْ كَانَ خَيْرَهُ شَارَأ
وَإِنِّي أُرْبِدُ فِي صَدَى المُهِدِّي لَقَبِيلٌ
فَرَأْتُهَا حِيْثُ تَبَرَّأْتُ تَلَمَّدُهَا
وَقَتَتْ تَمْ أَدَّتُ لِرَقَصُهَا وَلَوْ جَرَأ
عَرَنِيَّةُ الصَّحَا، وَلاَكِسُ السَّنَأْرُ

إِذَا مَاتَكَ الْعَدْمَةُ فَأَحْدِثُها
فَإِنَّهَا إِنْ بَلَّمَانَ كَ، فَقَصَصْنَا

۱۵۸
۱۵۷
۱۵۶
۱۵۵
۱۶۲
۱۶۱
۱۶۰
۱۵۹
۱۵۸
۱۵۷
۱۵۶
۱۵۵
لا يمكنني قراءة النص العربي هنا.
いただける人が訪れるまで、

また、これによります。

もし、これによります。

私たちの問題を解決するのに

しかし、これによります。

その問題を解決するのに

しかし、これによります。

ので、これによります。

しかし、これによります。

我々の問題を解決するのに

しかし、これによります。

私たちの問題を解決するのに

しかし、これによります。

我々の問題を解決するのに

しかし、これによります。

私たちの問題を解決するのに

しかし、これによります。

我々の問題を解決するのに

しかし、これによります。

我々の問題を解決するのに

しかし、これによります。

我々の問題を解決するのに

しかし、これによります。

我々の問題を解決するのに

しかし、これによります。

我々の問題を解決するのに

しかし、これによります。

我々の問題を解決するのに

しかし、これによります。

我々の問題を解決するのに

しかし、これによります。

我々の問題を解決するのに

しかし、これによります。

我々の問題を解決するのに

しかし、これによります。

我々の問題を解決するのに

しかし、これによります。

我々の問題を解決するのに

しかし、これによります。

我々の問題を解決するのに

しかし、これによります。

我々の問題を解決するのに

しかし、これによります。

我々の問題を解決するのに

しかし、これによります。

我々の問題を解決するのに

しかし、これによります。

我々の問題を解決するのに

しかし、これによります。

我々の問題を解決するのに

しかし、これによります。

我々の問題を解決するのに

しかし、これによります。

我々の問題を解決するのに

しかし、これによります。

我々の問題を解決するのに

しかし、これによります。

我々の問題を解決するのに

しかし、これによります。

我々の問題を解決するのに

しかし、これによります。

我々の問題を解決するのに

しかし、これによります。

我々の問題を解決するのに

しかし、これによります。

我々の問題を解決するのに

しかし、これによります。

我々の問題を解決するのに

しかし、これによります。

我々の問題を解決するのに

しかし、これによります。

我々の問題を解決するのに

しかし、これによります。

我々の問題を解決するのに

しかし、これによります。

我々の問題を解決するのに

しかし、これによります。

我々の問題を解決するのに

しかし、これによります。

我々の問題を解決するのに

しかし、これによります。

我々の問題を解決するのに

しかし、これによります。

我々の問題を解決するのに

しかし、これによります。

我々の問題を解決するのに

しかし、これによります。

我々の問題を解決するのに

しかし、これによります。

我々の問題を解決するのに

しかし、これによります。

我々の問題を解決するのに

しかし、これによります。

我々の問題を解決するのに

しかし、これによります。

我々の問題を解決するのに

しかし、これによります。

我々の問題を解決するのに

しかし、これによります。

我々の問題を解決するのに

しかし、これによります。

我々の問題を解決するのに

しかし、これによります。

我々の問題を解決するのに

しかし、これによります。

我々の問題を解決するのに

しかし、これによります。

我々の問題を解決するのに

しかし、これによります。

我々の問題を解決するのに

しかし、これによります。

我々の問題を解決するのに

しかし、これによります。

我々の問題を解決するのに

しかし、これによります。

我々の問題を解決するのに

しかし、これによります。

我々の問題を解決するのに

しかし、これによります。

我々の問題を解決するのに

しかし、これによります。

我々の問題を解決するのに

しかし、これによります。

我々の問題を解決するのに

しかし、これによります。

我々の問題を解決するのに

しかし、これによります。

我々の問題を解決するのに

しかし、これによります。

我々の問題を解決するのに

しかし、これによります。

我々の問題を解決するのに

しかし、これによります。

我々の問題を解決するのに

しかし、これによります。

我々の問題を解決するのに

しかし、これによります。

我々の問題を解決するのに

しかし、これによります。

我々の問題を解決するのに

しかし、これによります。

我々の問題を解決するのに

しかし、これによります。

我々の問題を解決するのに

しかし、これによります。

我々の問題を解決するのに

しかし、これによります。

我々の問題を解決するのに

しかし、これによります。

我々の問題を解決するのに

しかし、これによります。

我々の問題を解決するのに

しかし、これによります。

我々の問題を解決するのに

しかし、これによります。

我々の問題を解決するのに

しかし、これによります。

我々の問題を解決するのに

しかし、これによります。

我々の問題を解決するのに

しかし、これによります。

我々の問題を解決するのに

しかし、これによります。

我々の問題を解決するのに

しかし、これによります。

我々の問題を解決するのに

しかし、これによります。

我々の問題を解決するのに

しかし、これによります。

我々の問題を解決するのに

しか
أما الفتح الذي لا يُكنث كلوته
وأنا في دراك وغموض قاسية
فأجتُ بيناً كمساءً في سكينة

هذا المسرقان ليما مات
وانتَ جعلت للحَشَال عمنا
أمر المؤمنين وأنا يكره
كيف بفعل يُشيّع عنا
أنت بأن آلاء وشيئٌ ملَّا
إذا سكونت السرايا لمن بما
إذا ومع السياط لنا نصار
فكيف تسمع الله من همذا
فأوق سمع الله من حمزة
وتواصل الناس مقبرات
إذا نرجح على ليسان داع

فقرر علينا ما عينت لنا
هذا من حكمة وصاية
ليكون ماشينا بنور الإيمان
иتيرون بغير العقلية
وكلفنا أمرًا ذهبت
حتى علمنا نلب مصل
ومست الأحساء أنتم
والرا قصص بكل مبسط
ما قلت الله أنقى تعرفه
ما استجزت أهل البيوت
هذا

وقد زيد في سؤولها الرطب
وكتانا باباً في سوسة لم يكن
يرقون نداً لعمان قبَّا النور
وأما ينفقهما طرفك بالثري

أري أمه شمرت سينما

174
175
176
177
178
179

لا عبادة إلا عبادة الإيمان فعمَّل به إذا ما وردت الأمة فأدلت ب졌يل
و أوتت الرسالة الطبيعية من أمر
فلو يعم شجاعة الأمة لم تعتم
لا ورث جنَّة أو زينت جنَّة

180

وعرفة الإمام حمَّل
بما استنباوا من خبا الخليل
من حرَّمات الله مَلَك
فإن يOUN المَلَك النقل
إذ بيلج لدحفل ينهده فجعل
ينقال عرفل وسرر شمال
كليّا ومَلَكه مَلَك بأي
وجذ الكلاب باللام القفل
فأصبح وفجاء الزمان الدُّكَل
وأمراء أفسروا فقعا نوا

181

فَصَّلَتْهُ كثير الصُّمُتْ
إذا ما إمام جار في اليوم أقصى
ومضى نصبه النذر تركه على
وأضع في مرَّة الامير المخلص
أرضًا من قُسْمٍ في المجرة
على ما أثرسها سما جَرِيلة
فقال له مدَّها كنفيذه...

182

اختر تَّسَئَت في القصص فإنها
والموضوع على المَلَك دائمًا
فإن جمّا أدرك الدُّمَر بالرَّزق

183

أمر المؤمنين جزيت خيرًا
بلقيادة وشجاعة فاعطًا
علي أنك الفائِتْ يُبَارُك أبُوله

184

 לדברيَن يائم المؤمنين رسانة
مَلَك الفُضّة إذا أنتم مال
فلو أي الفاروق أُحَرَّ بالذي

185

إذا ما حشينا من أمير طاييٍّة
إذا ما نفوتنا لم يطأسُوه
لا حوض النسي وساقية
ومينا من مثير حيّن جمع

186
وحنك حريت النبي وسلّم

187
ومينا في الله كتاب
وماراث من قوم مثلك

188
لنا شيخنا الله السادة وحديث
سيك الله إن حيّن إن الله لرسّم مثله
إمام الصدقة كثر من أي أواح له
فأمبَّيني مهَّال من يودي رقانه

189
هذا ابن عشي في مشرقة خليفة
فما وجد الإسلام بعد حصر
أزي الله بالإسلام والسياحاء
فما تركت بالمشترين شكركم

190
هاء مُمّار الإسلام والعبرة
فُرَّم في الإسلام مثلاً ومثال
فهم عمّا الإسلام مثلاً من أيّن

191
لُعْريَمٌ لقد قاد ابن أحوزة
يتحمل أخاه من كل مضبع

192
تابعةٌ الدُّينان لبحٌ من وليل
ويسعدنا نقول السحر فعُلّه ديناً
وكان نقوله آيتكم يا لله بصر

193
يا ردّ الناس في إسراد دين ومسلم
فِينتَال حيّن الباهليّة فضيم
وهُلم قتل هذا الناس به أشلحوا

194
وما أنسى النبي في جاهلية

195
وقد أسّمت تزنين عاماً وصلت
وًيسَدنا نقول السحر فعّل ديناً
وطاعته مصَّعب
وكان نقوله آيتكم يا لله بصر

196
يا ردّ الناس في إسراد دين ومسلم
فِينتَال حيّن الباهليّة فضيم
وهُلم قتل هذا الناس به أشلحوا

197
وما أنسى النبي في جاهلية

198
يا ردّ الناس في إسراد دين ومسلم
فِينتَال حيّن الباهليّة فضيم
وهُلم قتل هذا الناس به أشلحوا

199
وما أنسى النبي في جاهلية

200
وما أنسى النبي في جاهلية
آية نورًا لما كان عريثًا
فَأَضاَطَ اللَّهُ عِنْدَهُ عَرْشًا مَّدِينًا
فَلَمْ يُغَيِّرْ مَعَهُ وَلَمْ يُعْبَدَ مَعَهُ
فَمَا مَعَهُ مِنْ خَتَانَةٍ
وَمَا اسْتَنْذَلَهَا السَّنَاسُ السَّمِينُ وَلَيْبًا
وَإِذَا كَرَسَ نَظَرُWOOD TOGR MAZAR
وَهُمَا عَرۡقٌ مِّنْ عَرۡقٍ
وَهَا مَا كَرَسَ نَظَرُWOOD TOGR MAZAR
وَاتَّجَعَتْ دُلُوَّةُ التَّحۡطِيبِ
وَلَمۡ بَلَّغَ الْعُقُدَ
فَلَمۡ بَلَّغَ الْعُقُدَ
وَلَمۡ يَجۡلَدۡ مَعَهُ وَلَمۡ يَظۡلِمۡ مَعَهُ
وَمَا يَجۡلَدُ مَعَهُ وَلَمۡ يَظۡلِمۡ مَعَهُ
وَإِذَا كَرَسَ نَظَرُWOOD TOGR MAZAR
وَهُمَا عَرۡقٌ مِّنْ عَرۡقٍ
وَهَا مَا كَرَسَ نَظَرُWOOD TOGR MAZAR
وَاتَّجَعَتْ دُلُوَّةُ التَّحۡطِيبِ
وَلَمۡ بَلَّغَ الْعُقُدَ
فيه لقوم قُتِّلَوا مُصْفَرُوا وَاسْتَنَبَّوا يَامِعَةَ الْجُرُبِيّاء
والذين لَيْسُوا الْبَيْرِيَاء

يارب جَنَّاتُ سَبْرِ كِلِيةٍ
منهم يُبْيِسُ اللهُ حَيْثُ تَتَلَّهَ

لَوَّرْتُ مِنْهُ أُنُفُّضُ وَسَيِّفَةٍ
صَرِّبَتُ بِلَيْلِهِ تَحْرُورَةٍ

اِنْفُرْتُ بِهِ حَسًا فَمَانَّ عَشْيَةٍ

وَيَلَاَّ أَلْحُمْرَةُ الْيَلِيْدَ فَامْكَرْنَا

فَاصِفَوا ذَلِكَ الرُّسُلُ وَأَنْعَمْنَا
وَفَرَضْنَا بِهِ القُرْءَانَ وَأَنْعَمْنَا

لَقَدْ صَارَ فِي نَاحًةٍ وَسُلَكَةٍ
جِيَاءٌ وَبُرْرٌ وَنَصِيبٌ

فَتَوَّرَ الْمُسْتَمَارُ كَلَّمَتْ عَنْ قَرْدُ
أَيُّها وَبَشَّرْنَ قَرْدًا مَرَدُ
بِيَاهِذِهِ وَمَثْلُهُ يَغْلِبُ

لَقَدْ مُنِيبَتْ بِإِذْكَرِ المُحْتَضِرِ
إِنْ لَمْ تَحْرَكَ بَيْنَ يَدَاهُ بَاقِيَاتٌ
وَفَتَلْنَا بِهِ الْبَيْنِانَ قَانِلَاءُ

إِنَّ شَتِّىًا عَسَى حَيَاةٌ فَانْتَشَلْ
فِتَلُّا زَيَا وَالْقَمِسُ وَفَتَلُّا أَوْلُاءُ
وَدَخَلُونَ وَيَوْبُجُ

كَيْ أَسْأَلْ أَنْ شَتِّيْنَ حَارِيَاء
إِنَّكَ لَتَزَكُّرْ إِنْ أَدَا
فَجَعَلْ أَفْتَنُهُ بِنَفُتُ تَأْرِي

أَنْ لَمْ تُقُولُوا لِلْخَرَابُ كَلِيَةٍ
وَبَيَتَ النَّسَيَانِ يُسْتَقَادُ بَقَائَاً

فَلَقَدْ مُلَّتْ بِالْنَّجْحِ عِنْدَ ذِمَهْ
هُمُّ جَرَّوْا الأَرْسَاقَ يَتَرَا حُقُقُ
وَأَقَامُوا بِعَبْدِهِ لَهَا فِي اسْكَالِهَا

إِذَا ذَكَّرَ فِي دَارٍ كَافِهَ مِنْهَا الرُّزَى
سُحَا طَنْبًا لَفَيْوَرُ نَسْباً فَوَهَتِ
وَلَمَّا كَأَمَرَ السُّلَّمَانَ لَا يَقُولُهْ
وُلَدُ يُنَادَ الأَحَادِيْثَ وَيُرِكُمُ
فَحَلَّ قَنَّاثٍ تَأْكُرُمُ حُسْنُهُ

إِنَّ شَتِّيًا عَسَى بَيْنَ يَدَاهُ
مُصْفَرُوهُ هُمُّ قَنَّاثُكَ بَيْنَ يَدَاهُ

فَأَذْهَبَ لَهُمْ مَسْجِدَ أَمِيرٍ
اللهُ نَعَمَ لَنَا وَحَدِّنَا الْقُبْرَى
كَانَ بَرَاءَهُ بِحَمْساً
أَصْمَ، أَيَّ ماَ لَبَنُهُ الرُّقُبَ
أَنَّ الْمَفَاسَةَ صَبَبَ الْحَيَاء
سَوَى أَنَّهُ كَأَنَّهُ قَالَ: يَلِى القَلَامَ
وَتَوَلَّىَ الْعَلْلَ مِنْ نَثْرُ اِْمُ"}

أَهَوَى صَدَرَهُ كَلِمَةً مَعَ ذِكَارٍ
أَشِنَّى فِي عِبَادٍ عَلِيمَ
فَلَمْ تَنَصَّلَوا مَعَهُ أَبَأَ يَدَّارٍ
وَإِنْ تَنَصَّلَوا بِفَاسَاءٍ كَيْ مَنْ كَتَبَ
كَلَّفَهُ لَوَالْمَبْكَرِ نَقِيْهَا
كَمْ حَيِّى فَيْنَ أَنْ تُغْلِبَ آنِيَ
فَلَفَ لَقَيْنِينَ أَنْ يَبْحَثُ لَهُ الْبَيْنَ
سَمِعَ حَسْبًا أَنَّ الْبَيْنَ وَرَأَا
عَشْقَةَ الْفُجَاءِ فِي الثَّلَىَةِ رَأْيَةً
تَرْكَ أَيْوَدَ الْبَالِحَةَ بَيْنَهُ
وَدَى لْهُمْ سَائِرَ سَائِرٍ عَلَى الْخَاتَمَ
أَنْتَ لَهُ شَرْبُ الْمَبْكَرِ عَلَى مَيْلٍ
وَقَالَ: مُتَحَشِّيٌ بَيْنَكُمْ نَتَهْجَوْوا
وَلَا اسْتَدْوَىَ وَلَا الْشَّاهِمُ حَرْيًا
إِلَى كَلَّ. حَيِّى فَقَ حُنْطَبِي بَيْنَكُم
إِذَا الْحَتَّةَ اطْلَحَتْ رَحْمَةُ
وَبَلَغَ كَرِيرٌ: كُرِيرٌ كَأَنَّهُمْ
وَسَبَّتُ بِكُلِّ لَيْلَةٍ كُلَّ لَيْلَةٍ
يَبْشُتُ بِخَيْمَةٍ عَمَّى ذَهَنَاءٍ
أَسْتَرَكَ بِخَيْمَةٍ بَيْنَ مَيْلِ وَنَاسِرٍ
وَقَوْمٍ كَرَّاهُ آنَى أَنْ يُحَبْثُ
ظُلُبَ السَّيْبَانَ وَالشَّيْبَانُ الدَّاَيْسَ
وَفَلَقَتْ بَيْنِ مَوَارِنَ وَالْمَرْحَمَاتِ
فَلَمْ أَطْلَحَ بِخَيْمَةٍ بَيْنَ الْمَيْلِ
لَنَقْدُ أَنْ تَكُنَّ يَوْمَ عَجَازِهِنَا وَيَسَاءَتْنَا فِي جُلُودِ الْمَيْلِ
وُزَاتُ حَيْلٍ آنَى أَنْ يُحَبْثُ.
لا يمكنني قراءة النص العربي بشكل طبيعي.
وقال على باب مملأ أنت مسكون
ولا تأتي بالإسراء فأي
ولائتي في إلا أنا قهوة
وإذا أمرت غورد نفسك عادة
أحبوني ما لي ما حبيت سماحة
ما أنت أومنا هم من كان كناوا
فزرت فأحسنت الطري وسعتنا
وواصلتنا فيها مثفت كبيت
جتمع السماء مع القرير ليهني
يشته وناوح المتلوك ماء أب
إذا صلى في حمسا كل يوم
ولم أ=$(( السما الإبراس الستيان
وحاقدة القنديل ويلت المالر
فَمَا الذي لا يذن به خفًا
مَن يهلك الكبيرة يظلم بها كأ
أنا ابن خيرت نذير قهان
 وما يذوى الشاة إياكم
الشيء أن تقاسا صفا غيرها
وجامعه لا يطق السمار دونها
فما وُجد السافر حتى يُبنا
شفاء ولا سافر من سفال الْلَّه
من الداريين الذي دام أب
شفاء من الدائين الجهلة والقليل
حَضتْ تَحَفَّض النَّجَّام والمَشْدَا
عَلَى صَنِّير الرَّيق بَيْنَهُمْ مُحَرَّما
فَلَم يَرْجَحُ مُحَرَّفًا لَوْ أَنُمِّدُه
وَسَدَّ كَحْل نَّمَا فيَّ منْ مَنْفَر
فَإِنَّ لَيَقَبِّلُ البَلَاءَ نَمَّا يُقِي
لَهَا قَلْبُ نَوَابِي إِلَى السَّامِر
ظلِّي وَمَرَّ الْمَرْكَز أمعاء
ليست هناك أي نص يمكن قراءته بشكل طبيعي من الصورة المقدمة.
وَرَسَّدَ كَأَيْنَا هَاتَا يُبَارِ وَأَوْلَىَ ضَحَىٰ وَضَيْنَارَهُ ولَكِنَّهُمْ أَطْرَأَتُهُ هَالِعَةٌ وَخُفُّ مِنْهُمْ عِنْدَكَ وَبَلَّمٍ وَلَا تَنْبِئُكُمَا وَمَا أَمْوَالٌ إِلَّا عَجَابٌ

۳۷۶

۳۷۷

۳۷۸

۳۷۹

۳۸۰

۳۸۱

۳۸۲

۳۸۳

۳۸۴

۳۸۵

۳۸۶

۳۸۷

۳۸۸

۳۸۹

۳۹۰

۳۹۱

۳۹۲

۳۹۳

۳۹۴

۳۹۵

۳۹۶

۳۹۷

۳۹۸

۳۹۹

۴۰۰

۴۰۱

۴۰۲

۴۰۳

۴۰۴

۴۰۵

۴۰۶

۴۰۷

۴۰۸

۴۰۹

۴۱۰

۴۱۱

۴۱۲

۴۱۳

۴۱۴

۴۱۵

۴۱۶

۴۱۷

۴۱۸

۴۱۹

۴۲۰

۴۲۱

۴۲۲

۴۲۳

۴۲۴

۴۲۵

۴۲۶

۴۲۷

۴۲۸

۴۲۹

۴۳۰

۴۳۱

۴۳۲

۴۳۳

۴۳۴

۴۳۵

۴۳۶

۴۳۷

۴۳۸

۴۳۹

۴۴۰
لقد خان من أولادنا من مات
أخته وذله القبر، لم نستطيع
إذا جاء على الدماء قادراً،

376

أمس يتودد النيرجا
يقوم ويوضع حوجه
فلا صاح ميل مريجا
ويضحك العظام والريحاء
وأمر الناس أن يودجو
وميلع من سمعها ماججا
درازون خبىً شمسا
يا مريجًا داراً مولجا
تسمع سنار يعمج أجيا.

301
واحتظ سنةً من بشرة لماء
حتى إذا استلموا بأنورهم الداء
هم الشعراء، والله يтон كراها
صاحب ملالة الإبر
أين أبينها من تريش في البامر
وخصية للفرح والأطرد
كواريت ضعيفة عب burge
فاجأ وأبقى ملوعاً إذا نجوا
302
عطبت أمير المؤمنين ولما كان
ومنحت حتى شبع العينة
303
كما يفيض الريحان من ذي المثاب
مثب归属于 أبواب غير المثاب
304
وقد برح الوجه ذو فأمع
305
306
307
308
309
فتوس من رجاءك فضح حاد
وكذب مولى جليل بن مصين
310

وما كتب الله لهما نصعاً قد يقرب
وقد كان ذلك لإن سبعة سماك
فإن ترجعوا رجعت إلى الله
311
337
312
313
314
315
316
317
318
319
320
321
322

اذهب رجعت لله ون كتب
319
320
321
322

وقد عان الله ومال إشرافه في خلق
اسمه له فنحن نطلب
ومن ممثليه يزيد على من تكذب
ففي كل أقره ولم ألقى
نا أشرت في مسرح واستمع
خيمي كريم، ونسن ركذي
وماعلوب المصيّة بالنقاء
تبت علماً يوماً وليماً
والرجز فينا يلم مقصوض
من أهلها وفتة أجلاً 
بوزة هما، وفته معلم
لا تنسين دارهما جمعهما

لا تنسين دارهما جمعهما

وللما رجعت لله ون كتب
أو أَنْ كَلَّلَتْ مَعْطَى مَتَعَا تَبَنَّا
لَا أَسْتَطَيعُ الْيَدَ يُمِلَّ بِقَايَةٍ

۳۳۳
بَقَى جَالِمٌ نَّفْسِ الْحَاسِبِ
فَا رَجَعَ مِنْهَا ثُمَّ جَعَرَ وَأَرْضَى
إِذَا أَصْلَعَهَا نِمَيْلَةً تَوَحَّأَ يَتَغَيَّرُ
۳۳۴
تَبَلَّتْ مِنْ آنِسَ آنَهٰ
أَمَّا تَصَبَّرْ فَنَحْنَ أَفَقٌ
۳۳۵
إِنَّ الْيَوْمَ لَشَهْرٌ خَالِدٌ
باَمْرِ يَتِمَّ أَيْمَانُ اِلَّهُ
۳۳۶
۳۳۷
۳۳۸
۳۳۹
۳۴۰
۳۴۱
۳۴۲
۳۴۳
أُسْرَىٰ زُبَيْدَةُ وَنَافِعًا وَإِبَاءُ
وَأَنَّ رَجَالًا نَّفَىُهُمُ خَلَقُوا
مِنْ إِلَٰهٖ خَلِيفَ الْمَسَكَّ
وَهَذَا اسْتَهْلَكَ خَلِيفُهُ
فَأَقَسَّمَ مَا زَيَادَهُمْ مِنْ قَرْشٍ
وَلَمْ يَنْسِلْ غَيْرَ مِنْ مَعْلُومٍ
أُعِيْدَ مَا لَمْ يُعَلِّمْهُ عِنْدَكَ
وَقَلْتُ لَعِبْسَارِهِ مَاكَالَةٌ وَلَا ذَرَاعٌ
كَأَنَّهُ أَقْلَهُ مَعَ عَدَلٍ
فَالَّذِي أَلْقَى عَنْهُ مَا يَقْلِبُ
فَهُمْ الَّذِينَ تَقُلُّ مِنْ خَالِجٍ
ذَكَّ أَبَا الْثَّلَاثِ السَّبْطِ الْبَعْجَ
لَمْ يَنْفَعْ مِنْ نَُّوَاتِهِ لَمْ يُلْصَلْنَا
وَأَسْتِرَلَا بَلْاءَكُمَا النَّابِيُّ
كَيْسُرَةَ كَأَنَّهُ عَدِيدُهُ أَوْكَتَهُ
وَلَوْ لَمْ يَسْتَعْقِلَ وَفْرَصُهُ
وَكَيْلَمْ دُيْنِهِ مَثَلِهِ
عَلَى قَدِيرٍ حَبَايْثَ دَوَّارًا
فِي أَجْهَلِ الْفَلِّهِ الْفَجَاحِ
إِنَّ مَعَهُ مَنْ أَهْلَ السَّنَانَ كَاذِرًا
أَنْ تُسَٰلُ السَّلَاحُ مِنْ أَمْرٍ مَّانِعٍ
وَكَيْلَمْ فِي قَٰلِي مِمَّسَانَ مِنْ مَجَّةٍ
وَمَا حَلَثَ إِلَّا أَنْ قَبَّالَ ذَٰلِكَ
نَّفَسُ عُلُمُطُها مِنْ أَنْ أَنَا
وُسْعَ أَسْتِعْنَى فِي أَنْ مَسْ تَسْنَى
فَوَلَّ وَقَدْ خَلَتْ مَسْ أَهْمَدَ الْبَنَوْمِ
وَلَوْ سَأَلْتُهَا رَبِّيِّكُمَا أَنْ تَسْنَى
وَمَا بَصِيرَةٌ عَلَى أَنْ سَأَلْتُهَا
يَسْتَعْنِي الْمَلِكِ الرَّحِيْمِ اِنْفَضَتْ
وَلَوَّ لَبَغْتُ عُمَرَ وَعَزَّرَتْ وَعَظَمَتْ
إِنَّ سَلَيْلَةَ كَذِلَاكَ سَلَيْلَةٌ
قَلُّتُ لَحَافِظٌ أَوْسَيِّنَا
سَلَتِّ الْبِنَاثَ كَرَيْمَ الرَّؤْوُ عَمْتِهِ
فَإِنَّ نَفْعًا مِّنْ سَيْلَمْ
فَإِنَّ أَبَاها وَالْيَدَ نَسْيُهَا
فَا بَعَثْتُ عِضُورًا أَنَا نَقَالُ
فَإِنَّ لَتْنُهُ قَدْ رَجَحْتُ فِي جَذَهُ
فَدْخَلْتُ عِضُورًا أَنَا نَقَالُ.
نُبِيّت حُولَةٌ قَالَ فَالْحَجَّةُ أَمْشِها ٣٥٨

لاَثَّمَا كَانَتْ مِنْهَا الْحُجَّةُ أَمْشِها

۳٥٩

۳٦٠

۳٦١

۳٦٢

۳٦٣

۳٦٤

۳٦٥

۳٦٦

۳٦٧

۳٦٨

۳٦٩

۳٧٠

۳٧١

۳٧٢

۳٧٣

۳٧٤
يا رب خالى لأسألك من آل كسرى يعبدون منجاة
كتيب كمال رك ندي عشت
أنا ابن سعد وتوصف بهم
فأنا فيما سمعت من خلفه

وابناء إسحاق البوتر إذا أردوا
فيما سراهم البرير عليهم
إذا اختروا على المصدرين
مسيرة منهم مستشرين على أهل
أعْرَّبُ سيّبها بالضيوف إذا أرى
وكان كتاب فيهم ونبوة
لقد حادت الوصاية بالثقة معلماً
أبي أبو إسحاق بعث بنيا
ومنّا من بنيات النبي الذي دعا
وموسى وعيسى والذين رسأيا
ويعتبر منّا زاده الله جملة
فسمعنا والغَرُر أبناء سائراً
أبنا شهيل الله واسّه رَبِّنا
378
وَهُبَّ الْفَسَاحِدَ لِلَّذِينَ آتَيْتَهُمُ الْبَيْتَ وَالْأَمْوَالَ
فَلَمَّا جَاءَهُمْ الْغَيْبُ إِذَّ كَانُوا
فَإِذَّ كَانُوا
وَالْعَلَّامَةُ الْمَوْلُودِ الْمَكَّيْ
أَنَّهُمْ بِهِ كَانُوا
مُحْتَضَرٌ فِي الْخَيْرَٰلٰكُمُ
وَمَرْقَمٌ
أَنَّهُمْ بِهِ كَانُوا
وَالْرَّجُسِيَّانُ كَلاَّ ما،
وَأَنَّهُمْ بِهِ كَانُوا
379
حَتَّى أَتَيْتُ ابْنَ عَبَدٍ بْنَ عُمَّارٍ
مَن كَبَّرْنَا زِيَانِهِ مَعْمَرٌ
مَا مَنُّهُ مَنْ جَرَّخَتْ عَنْهُ
إِذَّ أَتَيْتُ رَجَاءٍ مِنْ سَوْقَتِهِ
مِنْ اثْنَىَٰرٍ مَنْ ضَيْقَوْهَا
380
إِذَا الرَّجَاءُ بَلَغَهُ ما أُبْدِيَ
وَأَنَا فِي كَرَّيٍّ وَحْرَيٍّ
يَلْهَوْسُ الْكَوْرِ أَبْنَى حَيَاً
381
لِيُعْجُبَنَّهُنَّ فِي عَيْنٍ
إِذَا الرَّجَاءُ بَلَغَهُ ما أُبْدِيَ
وَأَنَا فِي كَرَّيٍّ وَحْرَيٍّ
يَلْهَوْسُ الْكَوْرِ أَبْنَى حَيَاً
382
إِذَا الرَّجَاءُ بَلَغَهُ ما أُبْدِيَ
وَأَنَا فِي كَرَّيٍّ وَحْرَيٍّ
يَلْهَوْسُ الْكَوْرِ أَبْنَى حَيَاً
383
مَا أَنَا فَالْفَالِفُ وَلاّ الْمُمْلَكُ
كُلْيَةٌ تَزْهِلُ اتْبَعَهُ في الدُّرُّ
لِيَنَظَّرَ الْكَوْرِ فِي هَذَا نَقْرٌ
وَهُوَ دِيَّةُ الْعَامِ وَالْمَعْمَرِ
384
قُلْ لِلْكَوْرِ كَذَٰلِكَ قُرْنَتُ عُوُيْنَاءٍ
كُلْتَا أَنْسَاهَا عَلَى دِينٍ دُرِّيٍّ
مَا كَانَ أَنْتَ جَالِسٌ مَنْ ثَامِرٌ?
إِنَّهُ الْمَوْتُ الَّذِي هُوَ ذَاهِبٌ
385
أنا الدُّهر، يفقُي الموت والدُّهر خالدًا.
وَلَسْتُ رَاحِمًا بِذَلِكِ يَقُولُهُ،
إِن كَمْ نَعْمَةَ عَقَدَيْتُ الحُزُول.
فَعَلَوْاْتْهُ باللَّيْلِ بِتَأْفِيقٍ.
وَعَلَانَٰ قَالَ اِسْتُوْنَا كَنَا خَالٌ يَأْتِنَا
أَيِّ أَنَا سُحْرَتُ سَيْبًا
وَأَرْجُوهُ يَسْتَغْفِرُ النَّارِ
عَلَى دِينِهِ صَمِيكَةَ وَلَيْنٌ.
أَلِحَاجَ بْنِ الْلُّيْلِ، يَعْتُرِي.
وَقَدْ نَزَدَ فِي سَوْلَتِهِ الرَّسُولِ
يَا صَانِعَ الْبَلَاءَمُ بَانِثَةً
كَثِيرَانِ بَنَاتِيْنَ حَيَّاً.
وَقَرْسَكِ فِي هُوَارِ ثُرْوَاتُ
نوُضِحَّ ما وَسَرَّخَ الْيَوْمَا.
يَصْنِعُ شَيْءًا وَيَقْعُفُ وَقَفًا.
كُنْتُمْ كَمَنْ أَخَذَ فِي جُهُورِهَا
فَاحْلًا الْأَرْقَيْنَ وَلَا ذِيِّ الأُشْوَا.
وَلِيْدَةُ فِي خَبْرَةٍ مَّا قَبَلَهَا
وَصَادِقًا يَقُولُ الْيَسَبُوُّ حَمَّادٌ
يَا صَانِعَ الْبَلَاءَمُ بَانِثَةً
كَثِيرَانِ بَنَاتِيْنَ حَيَّاً.
وَقَرْسَكِ فِي هُوَارِ ثُرْوَاتُ
نوُضِحَّ ما وَسَرَّخَ الْيَوْمَا.
يَصْنِعُ شَيْءًا وَيَقْعُفُ وَقَفًا.
كُنْتُمْ كَمَنْ أَخَذَ فِي جُهُورِهَا
فَاحْلًا الْأَرْقَيْنَ وَلَا ذِيِّ الأُشْوَا.
وَلِيْدَةُ فِي خَبْرَةٍ مَّا قَبَلَهَا
وَصَادِقًا يَقُولُ الْيَسَبُوُّ حَمَّادٌ
يَا صَانِعَ الْبَلَاءَمُ بَانِثَةً
كَثِيرَانِ بَنَاتِيْنَ حَيَّاً.
وَقَرْسَكِ فِي هُوَارِ ثُرْوَاتُ
نوُضِحَّ ما وَسَرَّخَ الْيَوْمَا.
يَصْنِعُ شَيْءًا وَيَقْعُفُ وَقَفًا.
كُنْتُمْ كَمَنْ أَخَذَ فِي جُهُورِهَا
فَاحْلًا الْأَرْقَيْنَ وَلَا ذِيِّ الأُشْوَا.
وَلِيْدَةُ فِي خَبْرَةٍ مَّا قَبَلَهَا
وَصَادِقًا يَقُولُ الْيَسَبُوُّ حَمَّادٌ
يَا صَانِعَ الْبَلَاءَمُ بَانِثَةً
كَثِيرَانِ بَنَاتِيْنَ حَيَّاً.
وَقَرْسَكِ فِي هُوَارِ ثُرْوَاتُ
نوُضِحَّ ما وَسَرَّخَ الْيَوْمَا.
يَصْنِعُ شَيْءًا وَيَقْعُفُ وَقَفًا.
403
كان نبيّ حَرَابُها فَنَّسًا 
404
سَفَاهة النَّبيّ كَانَ النَّبيّ وَلَمْ يَكُن
405
لَيْبَيْنَ النَّبيّ مِنْ أَحِرِّ النَّبيّ سَادُ
406
ضَلَّت مَكَالَ السَّامِرِيَّ وَهُوَ دَاعِي فَظَلَّ عَالِمُهُ عَلَى عَنْعُ
407
مَوْرِبَت عَلَيْهِ الْخَيْبَات يُشْحَبُهَا
408
دَعْوَتُ الذِّي سَوَّى النَّبيّ وَقَدَّرَهُ الوَزْرَاءُ الْعُسْرَاء
409
كَانَ الرَّحْلاَيْنِ الْيَتَّابِعُ السَّميُّ
410
عِادَ الْكِتَابِ عَلَى الْعُمُّ حَيَّثُ الْعُيُوْتُ الْعُمُّ
411
عِبَّدَة يَسِيرُهَا عَلَى
412
كُنِّيَ كَنِّيَ المْرَحَ المَغْنُورَ 
413
سَوْلَةٌ فِي ضَرْوَاتِ الْمَضْرَد
414
وْكَرْبَانَ الْفَرْيَةِ الْجَهَرِيَّ
415
كُنِّي أَنْقَبُ أَنْقَبَ جَبِيرَ 
416
يُسْحِبُ السَّفْرُ الْمَضْرَدَةُ الْفُجِّيَّ
417
وُسْقُبُ لَوْمَاتِ الْجِزْرَ 
418
يُرَقُّ قَالَ كَيْ بَسْحُوُهُ
419
دِي أَيْنَ مَا كَانَ حَيْثُ
420
كَانَ عِنْدَهُ وَالْلَّوَّتُ نَوَارَهُ 
421
عَلَيْهِ كَرَانُ وَأُخْيَيْهُ
فَقَلَتْ إِنَّ الْمَهْدَارِيَّاتِ مَغْتَلِبَةٌ ْأَنَّا نَفَتَّنَّنَّ مِنَ الْمَلَائِكَةِ
وَأَقَمْنَّا سُوقَ الْمَهْدَارِ مَرَّاتٌ
لَمْ نَنَبِّئَنَّ الْمَهْدَارِ بِالْأَسْوَاقِ
وَلَمْ نَذْهَبْ مَنَابِعُ الْمَهْدَارِ
فَلَمْ يَقُولِنَّ الْبَيْدَاءُ نُفَطُ يْهُ مَعْلُوْبًا قَبْلَ أنْ كَأَرَيْنًَا
والشَّجَيبُ لُوُبَبُ بِالْعُسْرِ، الصَّارِيِّ المَبَاعُ شُرُّ حَجَرِ
الشَّجَيبُ لَسُوقَهُ لِإِنّ سُوَّقًا
وَقَبَّرْنَّ أَرْقَاتَهُ لْهُ عَيْبًا
فِيْتْ أَفْخَفَهُ أَوْ أَقُلْ مِيْنُهُ
عَرَابُبَ غَدْ يَرْفَعُ بِهِ أَخَفُّ
إِنَّ وَلَّتْ السَّاِيْرُ المَسْتَطْقَأَةَ أُسْجُحُ نَبَّيِّ الصَّنَعِ المَفْتَرِ
كُبْرَةُ وَالْمَسْرَوُفُ الْمَعْجَمُ
Bibliography


Abū-‘Ubayd, al-Qāsim ibn-Sallām: Kitāb al-Amwāl, Cairo, 1302.

Abū-Yūsuf: Kharaqāj, Cairo, 1302.


"" : Fajr al-Islām, Cairo, 1945.


"" : Kitāb aṣ-Ṣiḥāyatayn: Cairo, 1952.


al-Baghdādī, Abd-al-Qādir ibn-‘Umar: Khizānāt al-Adab, ed. Maymānī, Cairo, 1347.

al-Baghdādī, Abū-Bakr: Tarīkh Baghdad, Cairo, 1931.


al-Bakrī, Muḥammad Tawfīq: Arājīz al-‘Arab, Cairo, 1313.


Barbier de Meynard: "Le Seid Hûmyarîte", Journal Asiatique, No. iv, 1874, pp. 159-284.


Bevan (ed.): Naqā’iḍ Jarīr wa-ʾl-Farazdaq, Leiden, 1907.


"  "  :  at-Ṭaṣawwur wa-ʾt-Tajdîd fî-ʾsh-Shîr al-Umawî, Cairo, 1959.


ad-Dînawarî  :  al-Akhbâr at-Ṭiwal, Leiden, 1888.

Encyclopaedia of Islam  :  1st and 2nd editions.


Fâck, Johann  :  al-ʿArabiyya, (translated) Cairo, 1951.


"  :  Muhammedanische Studien, Halle, 1888-90.


Ibn-‘Abd-Rabbih : al-‘Iqd al-Farīd, ed. M.S. al-‘Uryān, Cairo, 1940.

Ibn-al-Athīr, %Diyā%-ad-Dīn : al-Jami’ al-Kabīr fī Ṣina‘at al-


" " : al-Lubāb fī Tahdhīb al-Ansāb, Cairo, 1357.


Ibn-Ḥajar al-‘Asqalānī : Tahdhīb at-Tahdhīb, Hyderabad, 1325.


Ibn-al-‘Imād al-Ḥanbalī : Shadharāt adh-Dhahab, Cairo, 1350.


" " : Sirr Ṣina‘at al-I‘rāb, Cairo, 1954.


Ibn-an-Nadīm : al-Fihrist, Cairo, 1348.

Ibn-Qutayba : Adab al-Katib, Cairo.


" : al-Ma‘ārif, Cairo, 1935.
Ibn-Qutayba : *ash-Shi't wa'sh-Shu'ara',* ed. A.M. Shakir, Cairo, 1364-1366.
" : *Maqāṭil at-Taibliyyin,* Cairo, 1949.
al-Jahiz : *al-Bayan wa't-Tabyin,* ed. Sandubi, Cairo, 1932.
" : *Kitab al-Hayawan,* Cairo, 1905-1906.
" : *Kitab at-Ta,j,* Cairo, 1914.
" : *al-'Uthmaniyya,* Cairo, 1955.
al-Khafajī : *Sirr al-Faṣāha,* Cairo, 1953.
Løkkegaard : *Islamic Taxation,* Copenhagen, 1950.
" : *al-Muwashshah,* Cairo, 1343.
al-Mas'ūdî : Murūj adh-Dhahab, ed. de Meynard, Paris, 1861-1877.

: at-Tanbih wa'-l-Ishrāf, ed. de Goeje, Leiden, 1893.


al-Muqaddasī : Aḥsan at-Taqāsīm, BGA iii, ed. de Goeje, Leiden, 1877.

al-Murtada (as-Sayyid) : Amālī, Cairo, 1907.

Nāṣr ibn-Muṣṭāmīm : Waqāt Ẓiffīn, Cairo, 1365.

Nūwayrī : Nihāyat al-Arab, Cairo, 1923-

al-Qālī : Amālī and Dhayl al-Amālī, Būlāq, 1324.

Qurʿān : Egyptian edition.


aṣ-Ṣafadī : Nakt al-Ḥimyān, Cairo, n.d.
Schaedler : "Ḥasan al-Baṣrī", Der Islam, 1-83, xiv (1925)

ash-Shaybānī : al-Jāmi' al-Kabīr, Cairo, 1356.

ash-Shayib, Aḥmad : Ta'rikh an-Naqā'id fī-'sh-Shīr al-ʿArabī, Cairo, 1954.

" : Adab al-Kuttāb, Cairo, 1341.
as-Suyūṭī : Bughyat al-Wu‘āt, Cairo, 1908.

" : al-Muzhir, Cairo, Ǧabīḥ edition (n.d.)
at-Ṭabarī : Tarīkh al-Umam wa’l-Mulūk, ed. de Goeja, Leiden, 1890.

Ṭahā Ḥusayn : al-Fītna al-Kubrā, i, ‘Uthmān, Cairo, 1951; ii. ‘Alī wa-Banūhu, Cairo; Ḥadīth al-Arbi‘ā, Cairo.


" : Skizzen und Vorarbeiten, 1889.


